

*Those Things
Most Surely
Believed Among Us*

Luke 1:1

*Independence Baptist
Church*

Independence Baptist Church

*P. O. Box 70
124 South Main
Foristell, MO 63348*

636-673-2180
www.independencebaptist.org

Wayne Reynolds, Pastor

browayne2003@yahoo.com

Independence Baptist Church

P. O. Box 70

124 South Main

Foristell, MO 63348

636-673-2180

Wayne Reynolds, *Pastor*

Those Things Most Surely Believed Among Us

Luke 1:1

Index

The Holy Bible.....	Page 1
Of The True God.....	Page 9
The Fall Of Man Into Sin.....	Page 16
The Way Of Salvation	Page 20
Of Justification.....	Page 25
The Freeness Of Salvation	Page 34
Grace In Regeneration	Page 37
Repentance And Faith.....	Page 42
Of God's Purpose And Grace	Page 48
Sanctification	Page 59
The Perseverance Of The Saints.....	Page 65
Of The Harmony Of The Law And The Gospel	Page 70
A New Testament Baptist Church	Page 75
Baptism And The Lord's Supper	Page 85
Of The Christian Sabbath.....	Page 101
Of Civil Government	Page 106
Of The Righteous And The Wicked	Page 109
Satan.....	Page 115
Lawsuits Between Believers	Page 121
Giving	Page 125
Creation.....	Page 135
Human Sexuality.....	Page 145
Divorce and Remarriage	Page 149
Abortion	Page 155
Gambling.....	Page 162
Of The World To Come.....	Page 166
Church Covenant	Page 182

THE HOLY BIBLE

WE BELIEVE THAT THE HOLY BIBLE WAS WRITTEN BY MEN DIVINELY INSPIRED AND IT IS A PERFECT TREASURE OF HEAVENLY INSTRUCTION; THAT IT HAS GOD FOR ITS AUTHOR, SALVATION FOR ITS END, AND TRUTH WITHOUT ANY MIXTURE OF ERROR FOR ITS MATTER; THAT IT REVEALS THE PRINCIPLES BY WHICH GOD WILL JUDGE US; AND THEREFORE IS, AND SHALL REMAIN TO THE END OF THE WORLD, THE TRUE CENTER OF CHRISTIAN UNION, AND THE SUPREME STANDARD BY WHICH ALL HUMAN CONDUCT, CREEDS, AND OPINIONS SHOULD BE TRIED.

I must at the very beginning of this study state that the King James Bible is the only Bible used by Independence Baptist Church. We believe every other version of the Bible has the wrong foundation, a foundation created by man to fulfill the desires of man.

I. WE BELIEVE THAT THE HOLY BIBLE WAS WRITTEN BY MEN DIVINELY INSPIRED AND IT IS A PERFECT TREASURE OF HEAVENLY INSTRUCTION

A. II Timothy 3:16-17 – **All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: 17 That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.**

1. VERSE 16a--Paul tells Timothy that it was through the learning of the scriptures as a child he was brought to saving knowledge through faith in Jesus Christ. The Old Testament scriptures are meant in this verse. The New Testament was being written at this time.
2. VERSE 16b--The Old and New Testaments are given by God and are profitable for:
 - a. Doctrine...The Word doctrine means, teaching.
 - b. Reproof...conviction, the Word of God rebukes with such effectual power that it is able to bring conviction of sin.
 - c. Correction...setting right improvement
 - d. Instruction...Discipline chastisement, it is used in the N. T. especially of God's chastisement by means of sorrow and evil.
3. VERSE 17--Two things are pointed out concerning what the Bible will do for those who study it. It will make them:
 - a. Perfect...This word means complete or fitted, for special uses.
 - b. Thoroughly furnished...To complete or finish, the one who studies the Word will be fitted out. Fitted out for all good works.

B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:

1. II Peter 1:21 – **For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.**
2. II Samuel 23:2 – **The Spirit of the LORD spake by me, and his word was in my tongue.**

II. THAT IT HAS GOD FOR ITS AUTHOR, SALVATION FOR ITS END

A. John 5:39-40 – **Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me. 40 And ye will not come to me, that ye**

- might have life.** Jesus said to Search the scriptures, all of them!
1. They reveal eternal life.
 2. Jesus said that the Old Testament scriptures told of him.
 3. People in the Old Testament were saved just like we in the New Testament are saved: by faith in Jesus Christ.
- B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
1. I Peter 1:10-12 – **Of which salvation the prophets have enquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you: 11 Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow. 12 Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into.**
 2. Acts 11:14 – **Who shall tell thee words, whereby thou and all thy house shall be saved.**
 3. Romans 1:16 – **For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.**
 4. Mark 16:16 – **He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.**
- III. AND TRUTH WITHOUT ANY MIXTURE OF ERROR FOR ITS MATTER
- A. Proverbs 30:5-6 – **Every word of God is pure: he is a shield unto them that put their trust in him. 6 Add thou not unto his words, lest he reprove thee, and thou be found a liar.**
1. Verse 5--The Word of God is not like the word of man. It is pure and can be trusted.
 2. Verse 6--To add to God's pure Word is foolish and will always make the one who does it a liar.
 3. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 - a. John 17:17 – **Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.**
 - b. Rev. 22:18-19 – **For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: 19 And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.**
 - c. Romans 3:4 – **God forbid: yea, let God be true, but every man a liar; as it is written, That thou mightest be justified in thy sayings, and mightest overcome when thou art judged.**
- B. It must be noted that the Bible is "word perfect".
1. God has inspired all the words of the Bible.
 2. God has preserved all the words of the Bible.

IV. THAT IT REVEALS THE PRINCIPLES BY WHICH GOD WILL JUDGE US

A. John 12:48 – **He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.**

1. The very same Lord that men reject and refuse to receive will judge them in the end.
2. Every person will be judged according to God's Holy bible!

B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:

1. Romans 2:12 – **For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law;**
2. I Corinthians 4:3-4 – **But with me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you, or of man's judgment: yea, I judge not mine own self. 4 For I know nothing by myself; yet am I not hereby justified: but he that judgeth me is the Lord.**
3. Luke 10:10-16 – **But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say, 11 Even the very dust of your city, which cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding be ye sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. 12 But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city. 13 Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. 14 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgment, than for you. 15 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shalt be thrust down to hell. 16 He that heareth you heareth me; and he that despiseth you despiseth me; and he that despiseth me despiseth him that sent me.**
4. Luke 12:47-48 – **And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. 48 But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.'**

V. AND THEREFORE IS, AND SHALL REMAIN TO THE END OF THE WORLD, THE TRUE CENTER OF CHRISTIAN UNION

A. Philippians 3:16 – **Nevertheless, whereto we have already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us mind the same thing.**

1. Paul tells the local church at Philippi that if we are to have fellowship and cooperate together we must all walk the same way and by the same rules, we must mind the same things.
2. This is why Baptists cannot unionize or join meetings with others.
3. Only those who are willing to walk by the same rule and mind the same things can fellowship together.

4. We must agree upon what the Word of God teaches in order to have Christian union.
 - B. It is possible to have “limited” fellowship with others.
 1. We can always fellowship with saved people around Jesus Christ.
 2. We can fellowship with others as far as our agreement goes.
 3. When we reach a point of disagreement on the word of God, our fellowship must stop.
 4. We must never compromise the word of God in order to fellowship.
- VI. AND THE SUPREME STANDARD BY WHICH ALL HUMAN CONDUCT, CREEDS, AND OPINIONS SHOULD BE TRIED.
- A. I John 4:1 – **Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.**
 1. The Bible teaches God’s people to try or test the spirits to see if they are of God or not.
 2. There are many false prophets who claim God sent them.
 3. How are they to be tested? By the Word of God. Isaiah 8:20 says, **To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this Word, it is because there is no light in them.**
 - B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true.
 1. I Thess. 5:21 – **Prove all things; hold fast that which is good.**
 2. I Corinthians 13:5 – **Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil;**
 3. Acts 17:11 – **These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.**
 4. I John 4:6 – **We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us; he that is not of God heareth not us. Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.**
 5. Jude 3-5 – **Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints. 4 For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ. 5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord, having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that believed not.**
 6. Eph. 6:17 – **And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:**
 7. Psalms 119:59 – **I thought on my ways, and turned my feet unto thy testimonies.**
 8. Philippians 1:9-11 – **And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge and in all judgment; 10 That ye may approve things that are excellent; that ye may be sincere and without offence till**

the day of Christ; 11 Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ, unto the glory and praise of God.

- C. Christ will try us by the Bible; therefore we should try others and ourselves by the word of God.
 - 1. John 12:48 – **He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.**
 - 2. Acts 13:46 – **Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you: but seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles.**

The Inspiration of the Scriptures

II Timothy 3:16,17 - All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: 17 That the man of God may be perfect, throughly furnished unto all good works.

- I. Is the Bible trustworthy as a record of historical facts?
 - A. About a century ago critics held the Bible to be untrustworthy as history. (Other things were also happening about 100 years ago – Darwin and his **Origin of Species** was popular, and new beginnings of psychology were beginning –(to mention a few)
 - 1. They said the four kings mentioned in Genesis 14:1 never existed, and that the victory of the kings of the West over the kings of the East, as described in this chapter, never occurred.
 - 2. They denied that such a people as the Hittites ever lived.
 - 3. Sargon, mentioned in Isaiah 20:1 as king of Assyria, was considered a mythical character.
 - 4. Moreover Daniel, Daniel 5:1, was supposed to be in error in mentioning Belshazzar as a Babylonian king.
 - 5. Typical New Testament examples of supposed historical errors:
 - a. Acts 13:7 – Luke’s representation of the island of Cyprus as being ruled by a proconsul is false.
 - b. Luke 3:1 – Lysanias as being tetrarch of Abilene while Herod was tetrarch of Galilee has been proved true.
 - 6. Many today deny the Genesis account of creation, which will never be proven or disproved by facts.
 - a. It is by faith we understand the worlds were framed by the word of God – Hebrews 11:3 states, **Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear.**
 - b. II Peter 3:1-7 gives a warning of scoffers in the last days.
 - 1) Because men have rejected the historical accuracy of the Word of God, they reject the relevancy word of God, and the accuracy of prophecy.

- 2) Because men have rejected the Genesis account of creation, they also reject the destruction of the world with water, and that this present world will be destroyed by fire.
- 3) Because men have rejected God as creator and Adam as bringing sin into the world, they reject the presence of sin and their need of a Saviour and of Jesus who came to save.
7. Many also reject the fact that sin causes death.
 - a. Therefore they reject the need of a Saviour.
 - b. They will spend their lives futilely searching for the truth of why we are on this earth and will spend their eternity in a burning fiery Lake of Fire.
- B. But how is it now?
 1. We can say today, after far-reaching investigations concerning ancient nations have been made, that not a single statement in the Bible stands refuted.
 2. The confident denials of early critics have been proved to be the assumptions of ignorance.
 3. Prof. A. H. Sayce, one of the most eminent of archeologists, states, "Since the discovery of the Tel el-Amarna tablets until now great things have been brought out by archeology, and every one of them has been in harmony with the Bible, while nearly every one of them has been dead against the assertions of the destructive critics."
 4. Some years ago the United Press broadcasted the testimony of A. S. Yahuda, formerly Professor of Biblical History at the University of Berlin and later of Semitic Languages at the University of Madrid, to the effect that every archeological discovery of Palestine and Mesopotamia of the Bible period bears out the historical accuracy of the Bible.

II. Inspiration is concerning only the original.

- A. The original is what God inspired.
 1. God has the original Bible in heaven just like the original tabernacle is in heaven.
 2. Moses made the tabernacle after the pattern in heaven.
 3. One of these days God will compare all these modern man-made bibles with the one he has in heaven.
 4. All that are wrong will be thrown out, and those people that have added to or taken away from his word will be justly punished.
- B. All the copies of the verbally inspired Word of God are the inspired Word of God.
 1. It is not wrong to say that copies of the Bible are verbally inspired because they are the Word of God.
 2. It is very technical, and somewhat silly, to make a difference between the verbally inspired original and the verbally inspired copies.
 3. The copies of the Word of God are inspired because God preserves them.
 4. If God did not preserve his original inspired Bible, we do not have the Bible today.

III. How was the Bible inspired?

- A. God revealed to men what to write.

1. I Chronicles 28:11-13 - King Solomon understood the prophecies about the temple by studying. **Then David gave to Solomon his son the pattern of the porch, and of the houses thereof, and of the treasuries thereof, and of the upper chambers thereof, and of the inner parlours thereof, and of the place of the mercy seat, 12 And the pattern of all that he had by the spirit, of the courts of the house of the LORD, and of all the chambers round about, of the treasuries of the house of God, and of the treasuries of the dedicated things: 13 Also for the courses of the priests and the Levites, and for all the work of the service of the house of the LORD, and for all the vessels of service in the house of the LORD.**
 2. I Chronicles 28:19 - God's spirit allowed David to understand the pattern of the temple. **All this, said David, the LORD made me understand in writing by his hand upon me, even all the works of this pattern.**
 3. Revelation 1:11 - The voice of God told John to write the things unto the seven churches. **Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: and, What thou seest, write in a book, and send it unto the seven churches which are in Asia; unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea.**
 4. Revelation 1:19 – John was told to write down the things (1) thou hast seen (2) the things which are, and (3) the things which shall be hereafter. (This is a vision of the Lord.)
 5. Exodus 20:1 – **And God spake all these words, saying...** God gave the law to Moses, writing the Ten Commandments on tables of stone, and speaking the rest to Moses.
 6. Daniel 9:20-23 – The angel Gabriel spoke to Daniel, giving him understanding about the vision he had seen, which thing Daniel wrote down for us.
- B. The divine origin and authority of the Word of God is not to be affirmed so as to exclude or impair the reality of the human authorship, and the peculiarities resulting there from. The Bible is God's Word to man, throughout; yet at the same time it is really and thoroughly a man's composition. No attempt should be made—and we shall certainly make none—to set aside or ignore the human element of the Scriptures, which is unmistakably apparent on their very face; no one should wish to so magnify the divine as to crowd this out, or almost out. ¹
1. Sometimes, it may be frankly conceded, zeal for the divine authority and inerrancy of the Scriptures may have led to untenable theories and modes of expression, that have rather obscured the truth. To say, e. g., that the writers were mere passive instruments in the hand of the Spirit, or at best amanuenses writing to dictation – to adopt, in other words, the mechanical theory, is unwarranted and mischievous. It is no part of the doctrine, and has never been generally held ²

¹ **A Systematic Study of Bible Doctrine**, by T. P. Simmons, page 39.

² **New Biblical Guide**, Urquhart, Vol. 8, Page 175. (**A Systematic Study of Bible Doctrine**, by T. P. Simmons, page 39.)

2. Daniel 12:5-13 – Daniel did not understand what he had written. See also Daniel 9:20-23 where the angel Gabriel explained to Daniel what he had seen.
 - a. Many authors of the Bible did understand what they had written, such as Paul, Peter, and John, so forth.
 - b. Some of the writers did not understand, such as Daniel, John the Revelator, so forth.
- IV. Proofs of divine revelation.
- A. Paul affirmed that he used words taught him by the Holy Spirit.
 1. In 1 Corinthians 2:13, in referring to the things he knew through the Holy Spirit, he said: **Which things we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Spirit teacheth.**
 2. This is a positive affirmation on the part of Paul that he was not left to himself in the selection of words.
 - B. Peter affirmed the verbal inspiration of his own and other apostle's writings.
 1. II Peter 3:1,2, Peter puts his own and other apostles writings on a level with the Old Testament Scriptures.
 2. II Peter 1:15,16, Peter puts the writings of Paul and the other apostles on a level with the Old Testament Scriptures.
 3. Acts 1:16, Since Peter believed the Old Testament Scriptures to be verbally inspired it follows, therefore, that he considered the writings of himself and those of other apostles as being verbally inspired. **Men and brethren, this scripture must needs have been fulfilled, which the Holy Ghost by the mouth of David spake before concerning Judas, which was guide to them that took Jesus.**
 - C. Quotations in the New Testament from the Old Testament prove the Verbal Inspiration of New Testament Writers.
 1. Luke 1:70 – Luke affirmed that the Lord spoke by the mouth of the holy prophets.
 2. Hebrews 1:1 – The writer to the Hebrews affirms the same thing.
 3. Acts 1:16 - Peter affirmed that the Holy Spirit spoke by the mouth of David.
 4. Gal. 3:16 - Paul's argument implies verbal inspiration.
 5. Fulfilled prophecy is proof of verbal inspiration. Passages in proof of this are too numerous to need mentioning.
 6. Jesus affirmed the verbal inspiration of the scriptures.
 - a. John 10:35 – Jesus said: The Scripture cannot be broken, by which he meant that its meaning cannot be loosed nor its truthfulness destroyed
 - b. Meaning and truth are dependent upon words for expression.
 - c. Infallible meaning is impossible without infallible words.

God

WE BELIEVE THAT THERE IS ONE, AND ONLY ONE LIVING AND TRUE GOD, AN INFINITE, INTELLIGENT SPIRIT, WHOSE NAME IS JEHOVAH, THE MAKER AND SUPREME RULER OF HEAVEN AND EARTH. INEXPRESSIBLY GLORIOUS IN HOLINESS, AND WORTHY OF ALL POSSIBLE HONOR, CONFIDENCE, AND LOVE: THAT IN THE UNITY OF THE GODHEAD THERE ARE THREE PERSONS, THE FATHER, THE SON, AND THE HOLY GHOST: EQUAL IN EVERY DIVINE PERFECTION, AND EXECUTING DISTINCT BUT HARMONIOUS OFFICES IN THE GREAT WORK OF REDEMPTION.

- I. WE BELIEVE THAT THERE IS ONE, AND ONLY ONE LIVING AND TRUE GOD, AN INFINITE, INTELLIGENT SPIRIT, WHOSE NAME IS JEHOVAH, THE MAKER AND SUPREME RULER OF HEAVEN AND EARTH.
- A. General references to God.
1. Psalms 90:2 – **Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever thou hadst formed the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, thou art God.** God is from everlasting (eternity past) to everlasting (eternity forward).
 2. God is the One Eternal Spirit - John 4:24 states **God is a Spirit and they that worship Him must worship Him in Spirit and in truth.**
 3. God can be everywhere at one time and cannot be divided nor added to.
 4. Psalms 147:5 – **Great is our Lord, and of great power: his understanding is infinite.** Our God is infinite. This cannot be said of any mere man.
 - a. The word infinite means subject to no limitation or external determination, extending indefinitely, ENDLESS, INEXHAUSTIBLE, extending or lying beyond any pre-assigned value however large.
 - b. Man is finite which is the opposite of infinite. Finite is having definite or definable limits, or having a limited nature or existence.
- B. The name “God” in the Bible always has reference to him as the Maker and Supreme Ruler of heaven and earth. Genesis 1:1, **In the beginning God created heaven and earth.**
1. Revelation 4:11 – **Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.** Since God is creator he is supreme over all his creation.
 2. If there is one bigger and greater than God then we should worship that one, but there is none other God but the true God.
- C. The name JEHOVAH or LORD. (Notice this name is spelled with all letters capitalized) means, TO BE, I am the Sovereign, self-sufficient, self-existent, Almighty, Eternal, never-changing, always the same and everything you need God who reveals Himself to his chosen people. He is the promise-keeping God. Exodus 3:14 compare Exodus 6:6.
1. There are other names whereby(God /or He) is known in the Bible, but this one is used exclusively of the True and Living God. The other names are sometimes used of created things.
 2. God, Supreme Creator may be known to all kinds of people both saved and lost.

3. JEHOVAH is known and recognized as to what this name means by a chosen people alone.
- D. Those who recognize Jesus through faith as everything they need are saved and can claim all the promises of God through him.
 1. Psalms 83:18 – **That men may know that thou, whose name alone is JEHOVAH, art the most high over all the earth.**
 2. Hebrews 3:4 – **For every house is builded by some man; but he that built all things is God.**
 3. Romans 1:20 – **For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse:**
 4. Jeremiah 10:10 – **But the LORD is the true God, he is the living God, and an everlasting king: at his wrath the earth shall tremble, and the nations shall not be able to abide his indignation.**

II. INEXPRESSIBLY GLORIOUS IN HOLINESS, AND WORTHY OF ALL POSSIBLE HONOR, CONFIDENCE, AND LOVE

- A. Exodus 15:11 states, **Who is like unto Thee, O LORD, among the gods? Who is like Thee, glorious in holiness, fearful in praises, doing wonders?**
- B. Mark 12:30 declares, **Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment.**
 1. God cannot sin, but does have mercy upon sinners through his Son Jesus.
 2. Since God cannot and will not sin he can be trusted in everything.

III. THAT IN THE UNITY OF THE GODHEAD THERE ARE THREE PERSONS, THE FATHER, THE SON, AND THE HOLY GHOST: EQUAL IN EVERY DIVINE PERFECTION, AND EXECUTING DISTINCT BUT HARMONIOUS OFFICES IN THE GREAT WORK OF REDEMPTION.

- A. This is beyond man's explanation but the Bible teaches us that our God is a Triune God.
 1. There are three persons in the Godhead, yet there is only one God.
 2. These three persons are equal to each other and there is no division in God's nature or being.
 3. Jesus said in John 10:30, **I and My Father are One.**
 4. Ephesians 2:18 – **For through Him (The Son) we both (Jew and Gentile) have access by one Spirit unto the Father.**
 5. The Spirit of God the Father reveals Jesus the Son as Savior of sinners by applying the Word of God to the heart and soul of the sinner in order to save them; no one is saved apart from the Word of God and the Holy Spirit.
- B. We cannot see God because he is a Spirit, but he is revealed to man in Christ Jesus.
 1. John 1:18 states **No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, He hath declared Him.**
 2. Colossians 2:9 declares **For in Him (JESUS) should all fulness dwell.**
- C. Other scriptures:

1. **Matthew 18:19 – Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven.**
2. **John 15:26 – But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me:**
3. **I Corinthians 12:4-6 – Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit. 5 And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord. 6 And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all.**
4. **John 5:17 – But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.**
5. **John 14:23 – Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.**
6. **John 17:5 – And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.**
7. **Acts 5:3-4 – But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land? 4 Whiles it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.**
8. **I Corinthians 2:10-11 – But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God 11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.**
9. **Philippians 2:5-6 – Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus: 6 Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God:**
10. **II Corinthians 13:14 – The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost, be with you all. Amen.**
11. **Revelation 1:4-5 – John to the seven churches which are in Asia: Grace be unto you, and peace, from him which is, and which was, and which is to come; and from the seven Spirits which are before his throne; 5 And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,**

God

- I. God is the everlasting God.
 - A. Psalm 14:1, the fool has said, there is no God.
 - B. Some of the attributes of God.
 1. Infinity of God – There is no limit to God.
 2. Trinity of God – God is revealed to mankind in three forms: God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit.

3. Omnipresence of God – God is always present in all places. There is no place God is not.
4. Independence of God – God is the only truly independent being in all eternity.
5. Immutability of God – God never changes.
6. Omniscience of God – God’s knowledge is limitless.
7. Foreknowledge of God – God is able, not only to foreknow future events, but also controls them.
8. Power of God – God’s power is limitless.
9. Grace of God – Grace is unmerited favor – therefore all we receive of God is completely undeserved on our part.
10. Mercy of God – God looks with favor on those that are guilty.
11. Faithfulness of God – God will keep all his promises.
12. Wisdom of God – God is able to work all circumstances for our good and his glory.
13. Love of God – God is love. It is not that God loves, but God is the very essence of love.
14. Wrath of God – God’s anger and judgment toward wickedness is entirely right and good with no fault at all.
15. Will of God – God’s desire for all his creation.
16. Sovereignty of God – There is no king but God, as revealed in the holy trinity.
17. Patience of God – God is longsuffering toward sin, as his plan will be accomplished in the end.
18. Holiness of God – God is perfect in holiness with no sin, and no ability to sin.
19. Silence of God – God is a silent God as far as revelation today, but he will come in the clouds and call his saints to him.

II. God is the creator.

- A. Psalms 19:1-4 - Nature declares there is a God. **To the chief Musician, A Psalm of David. The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament showeth his handiwork. 2 Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night showeth knowledge. 3 There is no speech nor language, where their voice is not heard. 4 Their line is gone out through all the earth, and their words to the end of the world. In them hath he set a tabernacle for the sun,**
- B. Psalms 139:14 - Our bodies declare the existence of God. Note the eyes, ears, the smelling, the tasting and feeling. (We are fearfully and wonderfully made.)
 1. **For thou hast possessed my reins: thou hast covered me in my mother’s womb. 14 I will praise thee; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvellous are thy works; and that my soul knoweth right well. 15 My substance was not hid from thee, when I was made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. 16 Thine eyes did see my substance, yet being unperfect; and in thy book all my members were written, which in continuance were fashioned, when as yet there was none of them.**
 2. Science can tell us **how** flesh can see, hear, smell, taste and feel, but science can’t tell us **why** flesh can see, hear, smell, taste and feel.
- C. Colossians 1:17 – ... **by him all things consist...**

1. If God did not hold this world together, it would not stay together.
 2. The nature of God can be seen in all things of nature, because God designed it that way.
 3. That is why the fool has said in his heart there is no God.
- III. There is a trinity in the eternal Godhead.
- A. The work of the Trinity: God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit (or Ghost).
1. Matthew 28:18-20 – **Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:**
 2. I Peter 1:2 – The three works of the Godhead that brings salvation to dead sinners. **Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied.**
 3. I John 5:7,8 – The trinity explained – these verses are left out of the NIV. **For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one. 8 And there are three that bear witness in earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one.**
- B. The Work of God the Father.
1. Our election to eternal life is according to the foreknowledge of God the Father.
 - a. Some believe our election is based on God looking into the future, determining who would believe, therefore electing those to eternal life.
 - b. If this is so, there is no need for election because election takes place after salvation, not before.
 - c. If this is so, there is no such thing as total depravity, or the complete inability of men to come to Christ on their own.
 - d. Psalm 14:2-3 states, **The LORD looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, and seek God. 3 They are all gone aside, they are all together become filthy: there is none that doeth good, no, not one.**
 - e. These verses make it abundantly clear that when God looked upon the children of men to see if any understood or sought him, he saw there was none.
 - f. Therefore God elected some to salvation, giving them the free gift of eternal life.
 2. We believe that God is sovereign in the bestowal of spiritual gifts to every believer.
 - a. God uniquely uses evangelists, pastors, and teachers to equip believers in the assembly in order that they can do the work of the ministry.
 - b. Ephesians 4:7-12 – God puts the various officers in the church for the edification of each church member.
- C. The work of God the Son.

1. Philippians 2:6 - We believe that Jesus was with God before the world began. **Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God:**
 2. We believe that the Lord Jesus Christ, the eternal Son of God, became man, without ceasing to be God, having been conceived by the Holy Spirit and born of the virgin Mary, in order that he might reveal God and redeem sinful men.
 - a. Isaiah 7:14 – the miracle of God is that the Christ child was born from a virgin.
 - b. Luke 1:35 – The angel came to Mary, explaining she will be overshadowed with the Holy Ghost, and will conceive and bear a child.
 3. We believe the Lord Jesus Christ accomplished our redemption through his death on the cross as a representative, vicarious, substitutionary sacrifice; and, that our justification is made sure by his literal, physical resurrection from the dead.
 - a. Acts 2:18-36 – Peter preached Christ on the Day of Pentecost.
 - b. Romans 3:24-25 – Christ has redeemed us from the slave market of sin.
 4. We believe the Lord Jesus Christ ascended to Heaven, and is now exalted at the right hand of God, where, as our High Priest, he fulfills the ministry of Representative, Intercessor, and Advocate.
 - a. Acts 1:9-10 – Jesus returns to heaven.
 - b. Romans 8:34 – Christ has died and is now on the right hand of the father, making intercession for us.
 - c. Acts 7:56 – Stephen saw Jesus standing on the right hand of his father.
 - d. Revelation 12:10 – Satan is now accusing us before God, but Jesus is our constant advocate.
- D. The work of the Holy Spirit.
1. We believe the Holy Spirit is the person of the Godhead who convicts the whole world of sin, of righteousness, and of judgment; and, that he is the supernatural agent in regeneration, indwelling and sealing all true believers unto the day of redemption.
 - a. Romans 1:20-21 – Men refuse to listen to the inner voice of God as he reveals himself to them, therefore they refuse to listen to anything else God says.
 - b. I Kings 19:11,12 states, **And he said, Go forth, and stand upon the mount before the LORD. And, behold, the LORD passed by, and a great and strong wind rent the mountains, and brake in pieces the rocks before the LORD; but the LORD was not in the wind: and after the wind an earthquake; but the LORD was not in the earthquake: 12 And after the earthquake a fire; but the LORD was not in the fire: and after the fire a still small voice.**
 - c. It is often not earth shaking events God uses to get our attention, but his still small voice.
 2. We believe the Holy Spirit is the divine teacher who assists believers to understand and appropriate the Scriptures and that it is the privilege and duty of all the saved to be filled with the Spirit.

- a. I John 2:27 – We have no need for anybody to teach us, because the Holy Spirit teaches us.
- b. Pray and study - God will reveal all we need to know.
3. We believe the sign gifts of the Holy Spirit, such as speaking in tongues and the gift of healing were temporary. We believe speaking in tongues was never the common or necessary sign of the baptism or filling of the Holy Spirit.
 - a. I Corinthians 12-14 – an explanation of the gifts of the Holy Spirit.
 - b. Galatians 5:22 – the fruit of the spirit is: love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, and temperance.

The Doctrine of Total Depravity

How did sin come into the world?

Ecclesiastes 7:29 **Lo, this only have I found, that God hath made man upright; but they have sought out many inventions.**

WE BELIEVE THAT MAN WAS CREATED IN HOLINESS, UNDER THE LAW OF HIS MAKER: BUT BY VOLUNTARY TRANSGRESSION FELL FROM THAT HOLY AND HAPPY STATE: IN CONSEQUENCE OF WHICH ALL MANKIND ARE NOW SINNERS, NOT BY CONSTRAINT BUT CHOICE: BEING BY NATURE UTTERLY VOID OF THAT HOLINESS REQUIRED BY THE LAW OF GOD, POSITIVELY INCLINED TO EVIL: AND THEREFORE UNDER JUST CONDEMNATION TO ETERNAL RUIN, WITHOUT DEFENCE OR EXCUSE.

- I. MAN WAS CREATED IN HOLINESS, UNDER THE LAW OF HIS MAKER
 - A. Genesis 1:27 – **So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.**
 - B. Genesis 1:31 – **And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day.**
 - C. Genesis 2:16 - The command to not partake of the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil. **And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: 17 But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.**

- II. BUT BY VOLUNTARY TRANSGRESSION FELL FROM THAT HOLY AND HAPPY STATE
 - A. Genesis 3:6-24 reveals the sin of Adam was completely voluntary.
 1. Adam was not compelled to fall into sin.
 2. Adam was not predestinated to sin.
 3. Adam knew what death was and that he was casting himself and the entire human race into physical and spiritual death, even though none of this had been experienced.
 4. Adam *knew exactly* what he was doing when he ate the forbidden fruit.
 - a. Adam knew everything God taught him, and God did not teach any form of evolution.
 - b. On the sixth day, Adam was created, and then taught of God.
 - c. On that same day, God created the woman from the rib of Adam so Adam would be complete.
 - d. God and Adam had everything the same. Adam was not God, but was under subjection to God.
 - e. Adam knew and believed what God told him, but he had never experienced any of the bad things God told him about.
 5. Adam was never deceived.
 - a. Adam ate the fruit from his wife, not from Satan.
 - b. Adam ate the fruit because he loved his wife and did not want her to die alone.

- c. Adam placed his wife over God and his command.
- B. I Timothy 2:14 - Eve was deceived when she ate of the fruit, but Adam knowingly and willingly disobeyed God's law. **And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression.**
 - 1. The word transgression means a going over, a disregarding, a violating, a passing beyond an assigned limit.
 - a. The woman caused Adam to fall.
 - b. Most commentaries state that Adam was deceived by his wife.
 - c. This is not so.
 - d. Adam knew exactly what he was doing and chose to die with his wife instead of live with God.
 - e. Adam had a great love for his wife, but it was a misplaced love.
 - f. II Corinthians 11:3 states, **...as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted...**
 - 2. The woman, who was named Eve after God promised the Saviour, was deceived by the serpent, but Adam was not deceived.
 - a. She actually believed what she was doing would be good and not bad.
 - b. Adam, on the other hand, knew exactly what he was doing.
 - 3. When Adam sinned he brought upon himself and all the world a curse.
 - a. True happiness that once was in the beginning was lost.
 - b. Romans 5:12 **Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin: and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.**
 - c. Adam was the first sinner, but there are many sinners which follow him.
 - d. People don't die because they are mean, they die because they have the seed of sin in them.

III. IN CONSEQUENCE OF WHICH ALL MANKIND ARE NOW SINNERS

- A. Romans 5:19, **For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.**
 - 1. Ecclesiastes 7:29 **Lo, this only have I found, that God hath made man upright; but they have sought out many inventions.**
 - 2. Because all mankind are descendants of Adam (Jesus excluded) we are all sinners by nature.
 - 3. Adam's nature was depraved (thoroughly crooked), therefore we receive the same kind of nature he had.
 - 4. Since like begets like, Adam could only produce children exactly like himself and in his own image or likeness (sinners).
 - 5. Psalm 51:5 - **Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me.**
 - a. David was not saying the conjugal act of his parents was a sin.
 - b. David was saying he received sin from his parents, who received it from their parents, and so forth.
 - 6. Isaiah 53:6 - **All we like sheep have gone astray...**
 - 7. Genesis 6:12 - **And God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt: for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth.**
- B. Other scriptures that teach this is so:

1. Romans 3:10 - **As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one:**
2. Isaiah. 64:6 - **But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away.**
3. Psalms 14:2-3 - **The LORD looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, and seek God. 3 They are all gone aside, they are all together become filthy: there is none that doeth good, no, not one.**
4. Titus 3:6 - **For we ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, and hating one another.**

IV. NOT BY CONSTRAINT BUT CHOICE

- A. Many might blame Adam for their present miserable position, but each person is the cause of their own wicked and sinful position.
 1. Isaiah 53:6 – **All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.**
 - a. Each individual has turned away from God voluntarily.
 - b. We choose to sin against God because we enjoy sinning.
 2. Genesis 6:12 – **And God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth.**
 - a. The Bible declares mankind to be sinners through and through.
 - b. The whole imagination, the purposes and intents of mankind are corrupt.
 3. Titus 3:3 – **For we ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, and hating one another.**
- B. Romans 3:9-18.
 1. Paul said in these verses that God declared there are none righteous.
 2. The Bible says there are none that doeth good, no not even one person.
 3. The Bible declares that all mankind whether Jew or Gentile, red, yellow, black, or white, all are under sin.
 4. God says that none of his creatures seek after him in themselves.

V. BEING BY NATURE UTTERLY VOID OF THAT HOLINESS REQUIRED BY THE LAW OF GOD, POSITIVELY INCLINED TO EVIL: AND THEREFORE UNDER JUST CONDEMNATION TO ETERNAL RUIN

- A. Ephesians 2:1-3 - **And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins: 2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: 3 Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.**
 1. All mankind are by nature sinners according to Verse 3.
 2. We do only what we know to do by nature and that is to sin.

3. Men must be born again, or from above of God, in order to receive a nature divinely inclined to that which is divine.
- B. Romans 1:18 – **For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness;**
 1. God justly condemns men because all have sinned and come short of the glory of God.
 2. The natural condition of mankind assures all mankind of complete unholiness, therefore under the just condemnation of God.
- C. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 1. Romans 1:32 – **Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.**
 2. Romans 2:1-16 – When men know and understand all that God has done for them, they still do not desire him, or long for him.
 3. Gal. 3:10 – **For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.** Instead of desiring Christ to save them, men do the opposite, and try to obey the law so they will be righteous in themselves.
 4. Matthew 20:15 – **Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? Is thine eye evil, because I am good?**

VI. WITHOUT DEFENSE OR EXCUSE.

- A. Ezekiel 18:19-20.
 1. God says, **The soul that sinneth it shall die.**
 2. God says that individuals are responsible to him for their own sin.
- B. Romans 1:20.
 1. Paul tells us that creation declares there is an eternal Godhead that all men are responsible toward.
 2. No man, woman, boy, or girl can excuse themselves for not being what God would have them to be.
- C. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 1. Romans 3:19 – **Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God.**
 2. Galatians 3:22 – **But the scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.**

THE WAY OF SALVATION

Ephesians 2:5, **Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)**

WE BELIEVE THAT THE SALVATION OF SINNERS IS WHOLLY OF GRACE: THROUGH THE MEDIATORIAL OFFICES OF THE SON OF GOD; WHO BY THE APPOINTMENT OF THE FATHER, FREELY TOOK UPON HIM OUR NATURE, YET WITHOUT SIN: HONORED THE DIVINE LAW BY HIS PERSONAL OBEDIENCE, AND BY HIS DEATH MADE A FULL ATONEMENT FOR OUR SINS; THAT HAVING RISEN FROM THE DEAD, HE IS NOW ENTHRONED IN HEAVEN; AND UNITING IN HIS WONDERFUL PERSON THE TENDEREST SYMPATHIES WITH DIVINE PERFECTIONS, HE IS EVERY WAY QUALIFIED TO BE A SUITABLE, A COMPASSIONATE, AND AN ALL SUFFICIENT SAVIOR.

I. SALVATION OF SINNERS IS WHOLLY OF GRACE.

A. Remember our previous lesson on Total Depravity.

1. Because men are totally depraved, they cannot do anything to help themselves come to God.
2. God must come to them.

B. Definition of grace.

1. Royal favor.
 - a. Grace always is downward – as a king gives grace to his subjects. Grace is never upward – as the servant giving grace to the king. There is a difference between being gracious and giving grace.
 - b. Grace is always at the will of the one above us. We can influence the one above us by being conciliatory, but one who is dead in sins does not want to be conciliatory.
2. God's forgiving mercy.
3. Grace is God giving to us that which we do not deserve. Mercy is not giving to us that which we do deserve.
4. Grace is never earned.
 - a. Every other doctrine of belief except the true doctrine promotes the idea that men must do something, which entitle them to grace.
 - b. The Catholic denomination believes there are seven things you must do to be saved, all of which enable you to have a little more grace.
 - c. The Church of Christ denomination teaches that a person receives the grace of God when they go down into the water.
 - d. Most all religions teach praying, enabling God to give grace for salvation.

C. Ephesians 2:5 states, **Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)**

1. Paul, by the inspiration of God declared that GRACE saves sinners.
2. The word GRACE means unmerited favor, the undeserved love of God bestowed upon mankind through his Son Christ Jesus.
3. Paul said that men are saved by God's GRACE apart from baptism or church membership or good works.

D. Ephesians 2:8-10 states, **For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: 9 Not of works, lest any man should boast.**

10 For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.

1. Verse 8 - Paul tells us that sinners are saved by God's undeserved and unmerited love.
 - a. God saves sinners through faith, which is a gift from God.
 - b. Faith is not a work of men, but a gift of God.
 2. Verse 9 - Paul says that God saves sinners this way and this way only and no man can boast of their good works and say they saved themselves.
 3. Verse 10 – We are God's workmanship – that is we are the product of what God works in us.
- E. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
1. Matthew 18:11 – **For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.** Jesus had just finished explaining that little ones (children) should be allowed to come to him, for he is come to save that which was lost.
 2. Acts 15:11 – **But we believe that through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved, even as they.** The conclusion of this discussion is that no person is saved by keeping any part of the law, that salvation comes through the grace of God, no other way.
 3. I Corinthians 3:5-7 – **Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos, but ministers by whom ye believed, even as the Lord gave to every man? 6 I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase. 7 So then neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth; but God that giveth the increase.** This is pretty self-explanatory. Any person that holds anybody except Christ as the author of their salvation is sadly mistaken.
 4. I John 4:10 – **Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins.**

II. THROUGH THE MEDIATORIAL OFFICES OF THE SON OF GOD.

- A. John 3:16 - **For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.**
1. God's love for sinners, both Jew and Gentile, constrained him to send his Son into the world to live the perfectly righteous life that men are unable to live and God requires in order to stand in his Holy presence.
 2. Deuteronomy 7:7,8 – **The LORD did not set his love upon you, nor choose you, because ye were more in number than any people; for ye were the fewest of all people: 8 But because the LORD loved you, and because he would keep the oath which he had sworn unto your fathers, hath the LORD brought you out with a mighty hand, and redeemed you out of the house of bondmen, from the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt.** We have not caused God to love us – he loves us because he loves us.
 3. Jesus not only lived for both Jew and Gentile, but he was willing to be made sin for them and die on the cross of Calvary, paying their penalty for sin.
 4. Every lost sinner whether Jew or Gentile, red, yellow, black, or white, that believes in Jesus Christ as their personal sin bearer and Savior will never perish but have everlasting life.
- B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:

1. John 1:1-14 – These verses give us understanding of why Christ came into the world and what he intended to do.
2. Hebrews 4:14 – **Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession.**
3. Hebrews 12:24 – **And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.**

III. WHO BY THE APPOINTMENT OF THE FATHER, FREELY TOOK UPON HIM OUR NATURE, YET WITHOUT SIN.

- A. Philippians 2:6-7 – **Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God: 7 But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men:**
1. Verse 6 - Paul tells us that though Jesus was equal in glory with the Father even before the worlds were framed, he allowed no thought of selfishly using his outward manifestation of glory to bring about the salvation of sinners. In other words, he did not appear in all of his pomp and wonderful glory that he enjoyed with the Father in heaven to win his present honor and glory, but chose the way of humility and condescension thereby earning the glory and honor that is his as the only Savior of lost sinners.
 2. Verse 7 - Jesus laid aside his glory; he emptied himself of all manifested glory and condescended or degraded himself to the place of a man.
 3. Jesus came to this earth and was born in the likeness of man, but without sin. he lived his life on this earth as a man yet without sinning as all other of mankind has done and satisfied the Father as a perfect or sinless man and then took upon him the penalty of the sinners due and died upon the cross to satisfy the demands of God's law concerning sinners.
- B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
1. Hebrews 2:9 – **But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man.**
 2. Hebrews 2:14 – **Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil;**
 3. II Corinthians 5:21 – **For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.**

IV. HONORED THE DIVINE LAW BY HIS PERSONAL OBEDIENCE.

- A. What has already been said in our last thought will throw much light upon this one.
- B. Isaiah 42:21 – **The LORD is well pleased for his righteousness' sake; he will magnify the law, and make it honourable.**
1. Isaiah is speaking of Jesus many years before he appeared in the flesh and said that Jesus would please the Father and honor his law.
 2. Jesus was examined by God according to the law and found without spot or blemish.
- C. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:

1. Philippians 2:8 – **And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.**
 2. Gal. 4:4-5 – **But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, 5 To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.**
 3. Romans 3:21 – **But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets;**
- V. AND BY HIS DEATH MADE A FULL ATONEMENT FOR OUR SINS.
- A. Isaiah 53:4-5 – **Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. 5 But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed.**
 1. It is by his suffering in our stead that we are healed of the guilt of sin.
 2. Our good works and willingness to suffer are not the reason God the Father cleanses us from all (past, present, and future) sin.
 - B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 1. Matthew 20:28 – **Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.**
 2. Romans 4:25 – **Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.**
 3. I John 4:10 – **Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins.**
 4. I John 2:2,3 – **And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world. 3 And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments.**
 5. I Corinthians 15:1-3 – **Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye have received, and wherein ye stand; 2 By which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory what I preached unto you, unless ye have believed in vain. 3 For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures;**
 6. Hebrews 13:15 – **By him therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips giving thanks to his name.**
- VI. THAT HAVING RISEN FROM THE DEAD, HE IS NOW ENTHRONED IN HEAVEN.
- A. Hebrews 1:3 – **Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high;** When Jesus, who is God in the flesh, had purged our sins the Bible says he sat down because the work required for our salvation was completed.
 - B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 1. Hebrews 1:3-8 – **Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of**

the Majesty on high; 4 Being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they. 5 For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son? 6 And again, when he bringeth in the first begotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him. 7 And of the angels he saith, Who maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire. 8 But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom.

2. **Colossians 3:1-4 – If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. 2 Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth. 3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. 4 When Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory.**

VII. AND UNITING IN HIS WONDERFUL PERSON THE TENDEREST SYMPATHIES WITH DIVINE PERFECTIONS, HE IS EVERY WAY QUALIFIED TO BE A SUITABLE, A COMPASSIONATE, AND AN ALL SUFFICIENT SAVIOR.

- A. Hebrews 7:25 – **Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them.**
 1. This verse tells us that because of who Jesus is and what he has done, he is able to save every person that comes unto God through him.
 2. Jesus not only saved them, but saved them to the uttermost, or forever.
 3. This is because Jesus is the ETERNAL SAVIOR.
 4. He Not Only Saves Us Forever, but he is continually praying for us at all times as our Great High Priest in heaven.
- B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 1. Colossians 2:9 – **For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily.**
 2. Hebrews 2:18 – **For in that he himself hath suffered being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.**
 3. Hebrews 7:26 – **For such an high priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens;**
 4. Psalms 89:19 – **Then thou spakest in vision to thy holy one, and saidst, I have laid help upon one that is mighty; I have exalted one chosen out of the people.**
 5. Psalms 45 – This song describes the blessedness of Christ and how he has done great things for all his people.

OF JUSTIFICATION

WE BELIEVE THAT THE GREAT GOSPEL BLESSING WHICH CHRIST SECURES TO SUCH AS BELIEVE IN HIM IS JUSTIFICATION: THAT INCLUDES THE PARDON OF SIN, AND THE PROMISE OF ETERNAL LIFE ON PRINCIPLES OF RIGHTEOUSNESS THAT IT IS BESTOWED, NOT IN CONSIDERATION OF ANY WORKS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS WHICH WE HAVE DONE, BUT SOLELY THROUGH FAITH IN THE REDEEMER'S BLOOD; BY VIRTUE OF WHICH FAITH HIS PERFECT RIGHTEOUSNESS IS FREELY IMPUTED TO US BY GOD; THAT IT BRINGS US INTO A STATE OF MOST BLESSED PEACE AND FAVOR WITH GOD, AND SECURES EVERY OTHER BLESSINGS NEEDFUL FOR TIME AND ETERNITY.

Romans 5:9, **Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him.**

Defined:

Justification is that instantaneous, everlasting, gracious, free, judicial act of God, whereby, on account of the merit of Christ's blood and righteousness, a repentant, believing sinner is freed from the penalty of the law, restored to God's favor, and considered as possessing the imputed righteousness of Jesus Christ; by virtue of all of which he receives adoption as a son.

A shorter definition is: the state of being legally right with God.

Justification by faith:

1. Justification is not the **cause** of salvation.
2. Justification is the **result** of faith in Christ (in the initial salvation experience). It is because we are **already** saved by the everlasting grace of God that we stand before him as justified. His blood has covered our sins, we are perfect before God Almighty – therefore we are justified before God.

Justification by works:

1. Justification by works is the result of spiritual obedience in the flesh.
 - a. This is also called progressive sanctification.
 - b. Romans 12:1 - Our reasonable service to God is to present our bodies a living sacrifice.
2. Philippians 2:12 - Work out your own salvation.
3. Romans 5:9 - Note two tenses.
 - a. We are **now** justified by his blood.
 - b. We **shall** be saved from wrath through him.

SOME TERMS USED TO EXPLAIN JUSTIFICATION

Expiation, Propitiation (Ex pee ay' shuhn; Proh pih tee ay' shuhn) Terms used by Christian theologians in attempts to define and explain the meaning of Christ's death on the cross as it relates to God and to believers. Expiation emphasizes the removal of guilt through a payment of the penalty, while propitiation emphasizes the appeasement or averting of God's wrath and justice. Both words are related to reconciliation, since it is through Christ's death on the cross for our sins that we are reconciled to a God of holy love (Romans 5:9-11; 2 Corinthians 5:18-21; Colossians 1:19-23).

The definition of **Redeem, Redemption, and Redeemer**: To pay the required price to secure the release of a convicted criminal, the process therein involved, and the person making the payment. In early use the idea and the words related to legal and commercial activities. They provided biblical writers with one of the most basic and dynamic images for describing God's saving activity toward mankind.

- I. WE BELIEVE THAT THE GREAT GOSPEL BLESSING WHICH CHRIST SECURES TO SUCH AS BELIEVE IN HIM IS JUSTIFICATION.
 - A. The words justify, justification, righteousness, just, right, meet, are all translations of the same root word in the Greek language. This means that all these words have a general meaning that is common to all of them, even though their individual meaning may differ slightly.
 - B. Justification is not always talking about salvation, but justification is always talking about being right.
 1. God is justified.
 - a. Luke 7:29 - **And all the people that heard him, and the publicans, justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John.**
 - b. I Timothy 3:16 - **And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.**
 - c. No part of the Godhead had to be saved, but all the trinity is right, whether accepted by man or not.
 - d. The above verses relate that God, and Jesus Christ have been declared right, perfect, without sin, and holy before God.
 2. Men justify themselves.
 - a. II Corinthians 10:12, **For we dare not make ourselves of the number, or compare ourselves with some that commend themselves: but they measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves among themselves, are not wise.**
 - b. Luke 10:29 **But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour?** When the lawyer wanted Jesus to say he was spiritually without sin, Jesus gave the parable of the Good Samaritan.
 3. Justification in two other senses, which is the remainder of this topic:
 - a. Justification of the Spirit – Romans 3:19-4:11
 - b. Justification on the flesh – James 2:8-26.
 4. Justification is only one word that gives a partial description of salvation.
 - a. Sanctification is being set aside by God.
 - 1) In Election through predestination.
 - 2) In setting aside the individual for forgiveness of original sin.
 - 3) In setting aside the individual for a pure life before God and man.
 - b. Justification is being made legally right before God.
 - 1) God gives us of his righteousness and takes our sinfulness upon himself.
 - 2) In time, God makes our spirits legally sinless at the moment of salvation.

- 3) In time, God works in our lives so our lives will be legally sinless before God.
- c. Glorification is the redemption of the body.
 - 1) God assured us of glorification when he elected us to salvation.
 - 2) In time, the salvation of our spirits is the first step in our glorification.
 - 3) In the future, at the resurrection, we will be given a new body, which will never sin.
- C. Justification in salvation. (**Internal - to God**) Isaiah 53:11 - **He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities.**
 1. Luke 18:9-14 - The Pharisee and the Publican.
 - a. The publican asked for mercy, not justice. He received mercy and justification, not justice.
 - b. The Pharisee remembered his goodness before God, did not ask for mercy. He didn't receive mercy or justification. He did receive justice.
 2. Now we'll study **how** this justification comes to us.
- D. Romans 3:19-31.
 1. Verse 24 - Justified by grace (unmerited {undeserved} favor) through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus.
 2. Verse 24,25 - Justified by the blood of Jesus Christ.
 3. Verse 28 - Justified by faith without the deeds of the law.
 - a. Romans 5:1 - Justified by faith, we have peace with God.
 - b. Romans 5:10 - Justified by blood (now), therefore, we shall be saved by his life.
 4. Impute - To count, account, reckon.
 - a. Romans 4:6 – God imputeth righteousness without works.
 - b. Romans 4:7 – The result of God's imputing righteousness to us, causes our iniquities to be forgiven and our sins to be covered.
 - c. Romans 4:11 – To the Jews, circumcision is an outward sign of an inward belief in the promises of God to individuals and the nation.
 - d. The **internal** justification of Abraham was by faith.
- E. Justification, in the Bible sense, is the act of God removing from the believing sinner, his guilt and the penalty of that guilt, and imputing or giving a righteousness, which was worked out by Christ Himself in whom the believer stands, not only innocent and not condemned, but actually righteous as far as the legality of the law is concerned for time and for eternity.
 1. **It takes more than God loving a sinner for that sinner to be saved.** It takes a love that is effectual. That is – a love that can do something about our sins. Parents have love for their children, but they do not have an effectual love. When a child is sick, the parent can do many things, but the parent cannot make the child well again. Jesus can make the child well because he has an effectual love. This doesn't deny the love of God, but shows us more about what God did to gain our redemption. True love **always** produces that which is good.
 2. Justification is a legal term concerning the law. God is the judge and man is the defendant. God is the lawgiver and man is the lawbreaker.

- a. Sin is the transgression of God's law. I John 3:4, **Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law.**
- b. All men have sinned and broken God's law. Romans 3:23 **For all have sinned and come short of the glory of God: Romans 3:10 There is none righteous, no, not one.**
- c. Since we have all sinned we all deserve to die under the penalty of sin. Romans 6:23, **For the wages of sin is death...**
3. This is where justification comes in. It is that particular aspect of salvation which consists of deliverance from the guilt and penalty of sin. It is the legal aspect of salvation in which one has right standing before God as lawgiver. So far as guilt and condemnation are concerned, the believer is as perfect as if he had never sinned. (C. D. Cole)
- F. Justification is a blessing from God given to those who believe in Christ Jesus.
 1. God is the author of justification.
 - a. Romans 8:30 – Justification is only one of many blessings we receive at salvation.
 - b. Romans 8:33 – It is God that justifies.
 - c. Romans 3:24 – We are justified freely through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus. Beginning in verse 10, Paul reveals how wicked all sinners are. It is not by the deeds of the law that we are justified, but we are justified without the law by the righteousness of Christ.
 2. It is a blessing received through Jesus.
 - a. John 1:16 – **And of his fulness have all we received, and grace for grace.**
 - b. Ephesians 3:8 – **Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ;**
 3. It is a blessing enjoyed by all who believe.
 - a. Acts 13:39 – **And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses.**
 - b. Isaiah 3:11-12 – **Woe unto the wicked! it shall be ill with him: for the reward of his hands shall be given him. 12 As for my people, children are their oppressors, and women rule over them. O my people, they which lead thee cause thee to err, and destroy the way of thy paths.**
 - c. Romans 3:1 – **What advantage then hath the Jew? or what profit is there of circumcision?**

II. THAT JUSTIFICATION INCLUDES THE PARDON OF SIN, AND THE PROMISE OF ETERNAL LIFE ON PRINCIPLES OF RIGHTEOUSNESS.

- A. When the sinner is justified he is forgiven of all his sins. He receives a full pardon from God who is the judge.
- B. The blessings that the gift of justification brings are forgiveness, and the promise of eternal life along with every other blessing needful.
 1. Romans 5:9 **Being justified by His blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him.**

2. Zechariah 13:1 – **In that day there shall be a fountain opened to the house of David and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem for sin and for uncleanness.**
 3. Matthew 9:6 – **But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (then saith he to the sick of the palsy,) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house.**
 4. Acts 10:43 – **To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins.**
- C. Other scriptures that teach this to be true:
1. Romans 5:17 – **For if by one man’s offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.)**
 2. Titus 3:5-6 – **Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost; 6 Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour;**
 3. I John 2:25 – **And this is the promise that he hath promised us, even eternal life.**
 4. Romans 5:21 – **That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord.**

III. THAT IT IS BESTOWED, NOT IN CONSIDERATION OF ANY WORKS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS WHICH WE HAVE DONE, BUT SOLELY THROUGH FAITH IN THE REDEEMER’S BLOOD; BY VIRTUE OF WHICH FAITH HIS PERFECT RIGHTEOUSNESS IS FREELY IMPUTED TO US BY GOD.

- A. The following verses in Romans show God’s part in redeeming the sinner from eternal damnation.
1. Romans 3:20 – **Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.** – The deeds of the law (works of the flesh) will not bring salvation.
 2. Romans 3:24 – **Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus** – Our justification comes free to us by his grace, through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus.
 3. Romans 3:26 – **To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus.** – Jesus is the justifier of our sinfulness because he shed his righteous (sinless) blood for us.
 4. Romans 3:28 – **Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.**
 5. Romans 3:30 – **Seeing it is one God, which shall justify the circumcision by faith, and uncircumcision through faith.** – The one God, who justifies all through faith, does not make void the law, rather the law is established.
 6. Romans 4:2 – **For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath whereof to glory; but not before God.**
 - a. Abraham was justified when he believed God, and the righteousness of God was counted (imputed) to him.

- b. Genesis 15:6 takes place some 11 years after Abraham leaves Ur, when Abraham was about 86 years old.
 - c. James 2:21-24 – Abraham was justified by works when he showed by outward works his inward belief in God by offering Isaac on the altar.
 - d. Genesis 22:1-19 records Abraham offering Isaac.
7. Romans 4:5 – **But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.** – The ungodly can receive the righteousness of God by believing on him who justifies the ungodly (Jesus Christ).
- B. Romans 4:4-5 – **Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt. 5 But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.**
- 1. Paul tells us in these verses that we are justified not by what we do, but by what Jesus has already done for us.
 - 2. There is no way a lost sinner can justify himself. All are guilty of sin.
 - 3. There is nothing in sinner that causes God to declare them justified, which simply means they stand before God, Just as if they had never sinned.
 - 4. If a person is working to be justified before God, he cannot accept the grace of God.
- C. It is God's love that causes him to have mercy on sinners.
- 1. Romans 3:24 – **Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:**
 - 2. Romans 5:21 – **That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord.**
 - 3. Romans 6:23 – **For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.**
- D. The word GRACE means unmerited favor, kindness or service freely rendered. The unmerited favor of God toward man through his Son Jesus Christ.
- 1. God never justifies sinners because of what they do, for all have sinned.
 - a. Romans 3:23 - **For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.**
 - b. No human can declare us guiltless of God's law.
 - c. Only God can do this. Romans 8:33 states, **Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth.**
 - 2. It is only when God imputes (charges) our sin to Christ and Christ's righteousness to us that we can be justified or receive a full pardon from our sins.
 - a. God charges the sinners sins to Jesus and charges the righteousness of Christ to the sinner. II Corinthians 5:21 states, **For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.**
 - b. God declares sinners just on the grounds of the works and blood of Jesus. Jesus assumed the responsibility of our sin debt and paid it in full with his own life. Romans 5:19 states, **For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.**

- E. Other scriptures that teach this to be true:
1. Romans 5:21 – **That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord.**
 2. Romans 3:24-26 – **Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: 25 Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God; 26 To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus.**
 3. Romans 4:23-25 – **Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him; 24 But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead; 25 Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.**
 4. Romans 6:23 – **For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.**
 5. Philippians 3:7-9 – **But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ. 8 Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ, 9 And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith:**
 6. I John 2:21 – **I have not written unto you because ye know not the truth, but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth.**

IV. THAT IT BRINGS US INTO A STATE OF MOST BLESSED PEACE AND FAVOR WITH GOD, AND SECURES EVERY OTHER BLESSINGS NEEDFUL FOR TIME AND ETERNITY.

- A. The sinner is justified for Jesus' sake by God the Father, who gives the believer all the blessings needed for time and eternity.
1. Romans 5:1-2, **Being justified by faith, we have peace with God, through our Lord Jesus Christ: by who also we have access by faith into this grace where in we stand and rejoice in hope of the glory of God.**
 2. The sinner that has been justified in the sight of God is secure in Jesus Christ forever and has much to rejoice in. Romans 4:6 states, **Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works,**
- B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true:
1. Romans 5:11 – **And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.**
 2. Romans 5:3 – **And not only so, but we glory in tribulations also: knowing that tribulation worketh patience;**
 3. I Corinthians 1:30-31 – **But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption: 31 That, according as it is written, He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.**

4. Matthew 6:33 – **But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.**
 5. I Timothy 4:8 – **For bodily exercise profiteth little: but godliness is profitable unto all things, having promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come.**
- V. Justified in works (**External - to God and men**) People who believe you can be saved and not work for Christ; are not saved.
- A. Compare Romans 2:13 - Doers of the law are justified, and Romans 3:28 - Justified without the deeds of the law.
1. People are not redeemed from the Adamic nature by works of the law (outward works done in the body.)
 2. Romans 2:13 is in parenthesis (along with verse 13-15). Those verses are an explanation of verse 12.
 3. It doesn't make any difference if they have the law or not for (verse 11), there is no respect of persons with God - all perish without Christ.
 4. The explanation:
 - a. Read all of verse 13 - it does no good to just hear the law, but you must do the law.
 - b. John 6:28,29 - doing the works of God shows that you are believing in Christ (for redemption and living).
- B. Justification in the book of James: James 1:22 - Be ye doers of the word, not hearers only. This is an active, living, believing in Christ.
- C. James 2:8-16 - The Royal law and justified by works.
1. Verse 8 - The Royal Law is the real purpose of the law - love. Mark 12:28-31 - The greatest commandment in the law is love.
 2. Verse 14 - The question - is a person really saved if he has no works?
 3. Verse 15-17 - An example of a useless word of encouragement with no food or clothes, to back it up.
 4. Verse 18a - It is impossible to show faith without works. Man looks on outward works to discover inward faith.
 5. Verse 19 - It's not enough to believe in one God for the devils also believe in one God and they are not justified and will spend eternity in the Lake of Fire.
 6. Verse 20 - True believing causes action.
 7. Verse 21-24 - An example of justification in salvation and justification in works.
 - a. Genesis 22 - Abraham justified by works after Isaac was born and was a young man.
 - b. Compare Genesis 15:6 with Galatians 3:6 – Abraham was justified in salvation before Isaac was born.
 - c. Abraham was justified by faith in Genesis 15, and justified by works in Genesis 22.
 8. Verse 25 - Another example of justification in salvation and justification by works.
 - a. Rahab first believed in God, as recorded in Joshua 2:10 - when they *heard*.

- b. Rahab *believed* because of Deuteronomy 2:31, when God began to give the land of Canaan to Israel.
- c. Rahab then put that faith in action and helped the spies, 40 years after the inhabitants of Jericho heard.
- 9. Verse 26 - The grand conclusion.
 - a. There is no life in the body if there is no spirit in the body.
 - b. There is no believing faith in Christ if that believing faith produces no works.

VI. CONCLUSION - Eph. 2:8-10

- A. Eph. 2:8,9 - Salvation is by grace through faith, not of any works on our part.
- B. Eph. 2:10 - **After** we are saved, we continue to be the workmanship of God and anything we do for God that will last throughout eternity **must** be done by grace through faith.

THE FREENESS OF SALVATION

WE BELIEVE THAT THE BLESSING OF SALVATION ARE MADE FREE TO ALL BY THE GOSPEL; THAT IT IS THE IMMEDIATE DUTY OF ALL TO ACCEPT THEN BY A CORDIAL PENITENT AND OBEDIENT FAITH; AND THAT NOTHING PREVENTS THE SALVATION OF THE GREATEST SINNER ON EARTH, BUT HIS OWN INHERENT DEPRAVITY AND VOLUNTARY REJECTION OF THE GOSPEL; WHICH REJECTION INVOLVED HIM IN AN AGGRAVATED CONDEMNATION.

- I. WE BELIEVE THAT THE BLESSING OF SALVATION ARE MADE FREE TO ALL BY THE GOSPEL.
 - A. Romans 3:23,24 – **For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; 24 Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:**
 1. The gospel is the good news from God that everything lost sinners need in order to be reconciled to God is found in Christ Jesus his son.
 2. Salvation is a free gift from God to everyone who will receive it by faith.
 - B. Revelation 22:17 – **And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.**
 1. Only those who depend and trust in Jesus and him alone will be saved.
 2. The only restriction placed on salvation is that the sinner must be willing to come to Christ as a sinner.
 3. Isaiah 55:1 – **Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters...**
 - C. Some would say that people in the tribulation period have no choice in salvation, but they do.
 1. Revelation 14:6 states that during the tribulation period, there will be angels flying through the midst of heaven, preaching the everlasting gospel to all nations.
 2. Salvation is the same for all people in all ages.
- II. THAT IT IS THE IMMEDIATE DUTY OF ALL TO ACCEPT THEN BY A CORDIAL PENITENT AND OBEDIENT FAITH.
 - A. Mark 1:14-15 – **Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God, 15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel.**
 1. Jesus came preaching the gospel and declared that sinners must repent and believe the news of salvation through him.
 2. There is no salvation apart from Christ Jesus.
 3. Acts 4:12 – There is no other name given among men whereby they may be saved.
 - B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 1. Romans 1:15-17 - Paul was willing to preach the gospel at Rome because he was a debtor to all people.

2. Romans 16:26 - The mystery of Christ's coming to die for mankind is now revealed through the preaching of the gospel so that all could repent and be saved.
3. Romans 3:21-22 - There is no righteousness by keeping the law, but true righteousness comes by trusting the righteousness of Christ, and that righteousness is imputed to believers.

III. AND THAT NOTHING PREVENTS THE SALVATION OF THE GREATEST SINNER ON EARTH, BUT HIS OWN INHERENT DEPRAVITY AND VOLUNTARY REJECTION OF THE GOSPEL.

- A. John 5:39-40 - These Pharisees were searching the scriptures, but they refused to come to Christ.
 1. Jesus said that lost sinners willingly stay away from him because they do not want to come to him.
 2. Man's own will is depraved and contrary to God's will, therefore, instead of coming to him, they go away.
 3. John 3:19 – **And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.**
- B. People are lost because they want to be lost.
 1. Only when sinners want to be saved more than anything else will they come to Jesus that they might have life.
 2. John 3:18-19 – **He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. 19 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.**
- C. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 1. Matthew 23:37 - Christ desired Jerusalem to come to him, but they refused and were destroyed.
 2. Romans 9:31-33 - Israel didn't receive God's righteousness because they sought it by the keeping of the law, not by faith in the righteousness of Christ.
 3. Proverbs 1:24 - This verse is a symbolic gesture. Wisdom (God) called to the simple ones (sinners) to turn from wickedness, but they wouldn't hear.
 4. Acts 13:46 – The unbelieving Jews put the gospel message from them and judged themselves unworthy of everlasting life, therefore, Paul and Barnabas turned to the Gentiles.

IV. WHICH REJECTION INVOLVED HIM IN AN AGGRAVATED CONDEMNATION.

- A. John 3:18-19 – **He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. 19 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.**

1. Men are already condemned because they have not believed, but their continuing unbelief reveals their willingness to stay in darkness.
 2. Jesus tells us in the 18th verse that men are condemned already who reject him as their savior.
 3. Verse 19 says men are condemned because God has sent the light of the world (Christ Jesus) into the world and men would not come to the light for two reasons.
 - a. Because men love sin rather than Jesus and right.
 - b. Because if they come to the light of God their evil deeds would be made manifest.
- B. No person will be able to stand before God and say they are lost because of Adam's sin.
1. Romans 5:12 – **Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin: and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.**
 2. Romans 5:12 is true, but it is our own sins that condemn us.
 - a. Isaiah 53:6 – **All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.**
 - b. Genesis 6:12 – **And God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth.**
 - c. Titus 3:3 – **For we ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, and hating one another.**
 - d. Romans 3:9-18.
 - 1) Paul tells us in these verses that God declares there are none righteous.
 - 2) The Bible says there are none that doeth good, no not even one person.
 - 3) The Bible declares that all mankind whether Jew or Gentile, red, yellow, black, or white, all are under sin.
 - 4) God says that none of his creatures seek after him in themselves.
- C. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
1. Matthew 11:20 - Those cities that had seen the greatest works of Christ were condemned because they didn't repent.
 2. Luke 19:27 - Right after the Parable of the Pounds, the enemies of Christ will be killed before him.
 3. II Thess 1:8 - When Christ returns, he will take flaming vengeance on those that obey not the gospel of God.

GRACE IN REGENERATION

Ephesians 2:8,9 – **For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: 9 Not of works, lest any man should boast.**

WE BELIEVE THAT IN ORDER TO BE SAVED, SINNERS MUST BE REGENERATED OR BORN AGAIN, THAT REGENERATION CONSISTS IN GIVING A HOLY DISPOSITION TO THE MIND; THAT IT IS EFFECTED IN A MANNER ABOVE OUR COMPREHENSION BY THE POWER OF THE HOLY SPIRIT IN CONNECTION WITH DIVINE TRUTH, SO AS TO SECURE OUR VOLUNTARY OBEDIENCE TO THE GOSPEL; AND THAT ITS PROPER EVIDENCE APPEARS IN THE HOLY FRUITS OF REPENTANCE, AND FAITH, AND NEWNESS OF LIFE.

I. WE BELIEVE THAT IN ORDER TO BE SAVED, SINNERS MUST BE REGENERATED OR BORN AGAIN.

A. John 3:3 – **Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.**

1. Jesus, in speaking to the religious but lost Nicodemus, said that a person cannot see or understand the things of God except they be born the second time. This birth is known as the new birth, which is from above: of God.
2. Being born again is something that people cannot do for themselves.
3. It is impossible for a person or persons to make another person, or themselves, spiritual. It must be done by the power of God.

B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:

1. John 3:6-7 - Jesus repeats that Nicodemus must be born again.
2. I Corinthians 1:14 - Paul stating to the Corinthian church that he baptized very few of them. This statement shows that Paul didn't intend to make the people followers of him, rather he intended they become followers of Christ.
3. Rev. 21:27 - The only people that will enter into the New Jerusalem are those that have their names written in the Lamb's Book of Life (those that have been born again).

II. THAT REGENERATION CONSISTS IN GIVING A HOLY DISPOSITION TO THE MIND.

A. This does not mean that we are saved in our mind, and there is no salvation of the spirit.

1. Receiving a holy disposition to the mind is not all that regeneration is.
2. We are saved in our spirits, but salvation changes everything about us.
3. We no longer think the way we formerly thought.
4. We are now able to think like Christ, if we will only use what he has given us.
5. Now we have a new mind, so we can understand spiritual things.

B. II Corinthians 5:17 – **Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.**

1. To “be in Christ” is to be born again and to be born again is to be a new creature or creation of God.
2. Believing by faith is an act of the newly given holy disposition to the mind.
3. Acts 19:26 – Paul persuaded people that Jesus is the Christ.

- a. Paul worked on their minds and the Holy Spirit worked on their spirits.
 - b. The evidence of regeneration (and the new mind) is seen in the works of the body.
4. God puts his divine nature within us according to II Peter 1:3, which states, **According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue:**
- C. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
1. Ezekiel 36:26-27 – **A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh. 27 And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them.**
 2. Deuteronomy 30:6 – **And the LORD thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live.**
 3. Romans 2:28-29 – **For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: 29 But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.**
 4. Romans 5:5 – **And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.**
 5. I John 4:7 – **Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God.**

III. THAT IT IS EFFECTED IN A MANNER ABOVE OUR COMPREHENSION BY THE POWER OF THE HOLY SPIRIT IN CONNECTION WITH DIVINE TRUTH.

- A. John 3:8 – **The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.**
1. We do not see the Spirit of God when he does his work in bringing about the new birth, but we see the effects of it.
 2. The Spirit of God is likened to the wind by Jesus in this verse in that he is not seen, but the results of his power in the salvation of lost sinners is evidence that he is present.
- B. John 1:11-13 – **He came unto his own, and his own received him not. 12 But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: 13 Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.**
1. John says in verse 12 and 13 that all who receive him do so by the Spirit of God and not by the power of man.
 2. God gives his power to helpless sinners so they have the ability to believe.
 3. Believers become sons of God by the new birth.
 4. Sinners are as helpless to control their new birth as they were to control their natural birth.

- C. James 1:16-18 – **Do not err, my beloved brethren. 17 Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning. 18 Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of firstfruits of his creatures.**
1. All perfect gifts, such as salvation and eternal life, come from above and not from the will of man.
 2. Verse 18 – Believers are saved because God willed their salvation.
 3. Sinners are saved by the power of the Holy Spirit, through the preaching of the Word of God.
 4. No one receives salvation without first hearing the gospel.
- D. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
1. I Corinthians 1:30 – **But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption:**
 2. Philippians 2:13- **For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure.**
 - a. How God gives us wisdom, righteousness, sanctification and redemption is impossible to comprehend in the physical mind.
 - b. Saved people know within themselves it is true, because God speaks to them through the word of God and gives them proof.

IV. SO AS TO SECURE OUR VOLUNTARY OBEDIENCE TO THE GOSPEL.

- A. I Peter 1:22-25 – **Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently: 23 Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever. 24 For all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass. The grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away: 25 But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you.**
1. No one is saved against their will, for faith is being willing to trust only and completely in Jesus Christ.
 2. Those who are saved are willing to be saved.
 3. God in his wisdom and great love for us woos and draws us to himself by his Spirit and Word.
 4. God breaks our depraved, stubborn will in such a way as to cause us to willingly turn from our own ways to his and to love doing it.
- B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
1. I John 5:1 – **Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God: and every one that loveth him that begat loveth him also that is begotten of him.**
 2. Ephesians 4:20-24 – **But ye have not so learned Christ; 21 If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus: 22 That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; 23 And be renewed in the spirit**

of your mind; 24 And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

3. Colossians 3:9-11 – **Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds; 10 And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him: 11 Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: but Christ is all, and in all.**

V. AND THAT ITS PROPER EVIDENCE APPEARS IN THE HOLY FRUITS OF REPENTANCE, AND FAITH, AND NEWNESS OF LIFE.

A. Ephesians 5:8-9 – **For ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light: 9 (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth;)**

1. The fruit (evidence of regeneration, or the new birth) is seen in the life it produces.
2. Ephesians 2:10 – Saved people are the workmanship of God.
3. Salvation so changes us that the things that we once loved are passed away and hated.
4. When a person is saved their life will be different because of the work of God’s Spirit within them.
5. Philippians 2:12 – Every saved person must work out their own salvation with fear and trembling.
 - a. It is not that every saved person must figure out how they can be saved.
 - b. Salvation is not by works of righteousness which we have done.
 - c. Saved people work out their salvation by living for Christ.
 - d. Salvation is in the inside, in the spirit, but it is “worked out” to the outside, in the body.

B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:

1. Romans 8:9 – **But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.**
2. Galatians 5:16-23 – **This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. 17 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would. 18 But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law. 19 Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, 20 Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, 21 Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God. 22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, 23 Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law.**
3. Ephesians 3:14-21 – **For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, 15 Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is**

named, 16 That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man; 17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, 18 May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; 19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God. 20 Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us, 21 Unto him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

4. Matthew 3:8-10 – Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance: 9 And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. 10 And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.
5. Matthew 7:20 – Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.
6. I John 5:4-18 – For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith. 5 Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God? 6 This is he that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ; not by water only, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth. 7 For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one. 8 And there are three that bear witness in earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one. 9 If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater: for this is the witness of God which he hath testified of his Son. 10 He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in himself: he that believeth not God hath made him a liar; because he believeth not the record that God gave of his Son. 11 And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. 12 He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life. 13 These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God. 14 And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us: 15 And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him. 16 If any man see his brother sin a sin which is not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it. 17 All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death. 18 We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

REPENTANCE AND FAITH

WE BELIEVE THAT REPENTANCE AND FAITH ARE SACRED DUTIES, AND ALSO INSEPARABLE GRACES, WROUGHT IN OUR SOULS BY THE REGENERATING SPIRIT OF GOD; WHEREBY BEING DEEPLY CONVICTED OF OUR GUILT, DANGER, AND HELPLESSNESS, AND OF THE WAY OF SALVATION BY CHRIST, WE TURN TO GOD WITH UNFEIGNED CONTRITION, CONFESSION, AND SUPPLICATION FOR MERCY; AT THE SAME TIME HEARTILY RECEIVING THE LORD JESUS CHRIST AS OUR PROPHET, PRIEST, AND KING, AND RELYING ON HIM ALONE AS THE ONLY AND ALL SUFFICIENT SAVIOR.

I. WE BELIEVE THAT REPENTANCE AND FAITH ARE SACRED DUTIES, AND ALSO INSEPARABLE GRACES, WROUGHT IN OUR SOULS BY THE REGENERATING SPIRIT OF GOD.

A. What is repentance? (Preliminary remarks)

1. Today there are very few sermons on repentance. There are many sermons on salvation, but not many on repentance.
2. Whenever the gospel message is preached, repentance is always implied.
 - a. It is impossible to separate faith for salvation and repentance.
 - b. When a person has true heart repentance, he automatically will have saving faith.
 - c. Also when a person truly believes with their heart the Lord Jesus, they will have repentance.
3. Repentance is as old as the gospel, and actually a vital part of the gospel.
 - a. Today, the gospel - the death, burial, and resurrection of Christ - is preached and the doctrine of repentance is left out.
 - b. The result is not salvation.
4. There are many people who believe in Jesus, but continue in their lost condition.
 - a. They have never repented of being lost, they have never really repented of what they are; therefore, their belief is not a true belief.
 - b. It is a belief of the facts of the gospel, but not a belief in a personal Saviour that has personally forgiven them of what they are.
 - c. There is a difference between repenting because of what you are and repenting because of what you have done.
 - d. There is a difference between repenting because of what you have done, and repenting because you got caught.

B. "Easy Believism."

1. People who "believe the gospel", but refuse to turn from their wicked condition, or have another mind toward their sins.
2. People who turn from their sins, without turning from their sinfulness.
 - a. In other words, people, by the strength of the flesh, try to stop doing things that are considered bad, but they never recognize that they themselves are wicked, notwithstanding the things they do are bad.

- b. There is a lot of moral, external, fleshly, rehabilitation, (which is called salvation) without an internal, spiritual, reconciliation of the sinner to a most holy God.
- c. Much of modern religion is a “pick yourself up by your bootstraps” religion, which will eventually land many professional religionists in an everlasting hell.
- 3. Many churches are filled with lost people trying to live right.
 - a. They don’t have the will or ability to study their Bibles, or really get down to business in praying to God or really getting into the worship services and worshipping God.
 - b. They have a lot of trouble trying to apply the truths of the Word of God to their own lives - they’ve never really been saved, just convinced.
- 4. The end result is religion that does not mean anything to anybody.
 - a. It is a Sunday religion, which is forgotten on Monday.
 - b. There is no real application of spiritual truths in the lives of the professed believers.
 - c. Those that are truly saved become discouraged because the lives of those saved people around them.
 - d. Churches and families are constantly in confusion.
 - e. In short, you have what you now see around you.
- C. Repentance has always been preached as an integral part of believing. When a person sees the judgment of God upon them, they will repent.
- D. Definition of repentance:
 - 1. Bible - to have another mind.
 - a. This involves action, which comes from the spirit of man, initiated by the Holy Spirit of God.
 - b. Understand: the Bible states that repentance is a change of mind.
 - c. A person who doesn’t have a change of mind about himself, or his actions hasn’t repented, and is therefore lost.
 - d. A person who continues in sin after stating he is saved, is still lost, regardless of what he says.
 - e. Repentance involves a change of mind, which produces a change of will, which produces a change of living.
 - f. Repentance that does not change the mind, does not change the will, will not produce a change of living, and is not true repentance.
 - 2. Dictionary - To amend or resolve to amend one’s life as a result of contrition (broken down with sorrow for sins.)
- E. The repentance of God.
 - 1. Scriptures of God repenting.
 - a. Genesis 6:6 - **And it repented the LORD that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart.**
 - 1) This scripture does not mean that God is sorry that he created man; but that he is changing the way he deals with man.
 - 2) God had been dealing with man without physically punishing him for wrong.

- 3) Remember God did not kill Cain when he killed his brother Abel. Lamech, Genesis 4:23, was not punished when he killed a young man.
- 4) In Genesis 6, God begins to punish those people that sin against him.
- 5) This punishment is seen when God sent a worldwide flood on the earth. Today, the earth is waiting for another destruction by fire, II Peter 3:7.
- b. Exodus 32:14 - **And the LORD repented of the evil which he thought to do unto his people.**
- c. I Samuel 15:11 - **It repenteth me that I have set up Saul to be king; for he is turned back from following me, and hath not performed my commandments. And it grieved Samuel; and he cried unto the LORD all night.**
 - 1) This scripture does not mean God was sorry he made Saul king, but that he is changing his way of establishing kings over Israel.
 - 2) There are two things to consider here.
 - a) Saul was a physical giant, a king after the heart of the people of Israel. The next king, David, was a spiritual giant, a man after God's own heart.
 - b) Deuteronomy 23:2, **A bastard shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD; even to his tenth generation shall he not enter into the congregation of the LORD.**
 - 3) According to Ruth 4:18-22, and Matthew 1:3-6, David is the tenth generation from Pharez, the illegitimate son of Judah and his daughter-in-law, Tamar.
 - 4) When Saul was anointed king, there were only nine generations in the family of Pharez, but when David was born, the ten-generation requirement was fulfilled and the time was right for God to set David on the throne of Israel.
2. Scriptures of God not repenting.
 - a. Numbers 23:19, **God is not a man, that he should lie; neither the son of man, that he should repent: hath he said, and shall he not do it? or hath he spoken, and shall he not make it good?**
 - b. I Samuel 15:29, **And also the Strength of Israel will not lie nor repent: for he is not a man, that he should repent.**
3. When God is said to repent, it does not mean God is sorry for any of his actions.
 - a. When God repents, he has another mind, or he will act differently in the future toward men.
 - b. The solution to this dilemma is easily found when the word repent is defined.
 - c. Many people define repentance as sorrow for sin.
 - d. Thus they believe God has sorrow for some of his actions.
 - e. This is not the Bible definition.
 - f. The Bible definition of repentance is to change one's mind toward a certain action.

- g. For the human being, there is sorrow for sin, which accompanies repentance, but for God there is no sorrow for his sin, because he cannot sin.
 - h. When God repents, he has sorrow for the sins of mankind and changes the way he deals with them.
- F. It is possible to have sorrow for a particular sin without having another mind toward that sin. True repentance does involve sorrow, but there is a difference between Godly sorrow that there is sin, and sorrow because a person got caught in sin. Proper repentance: Compare Matthew 27:3-5 and Luke 22:62.
- 1. Judas – Matthew 27:3-5 - **Then Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, 4 Saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What is that to us? see thou to that. 5 And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself.**
 - a. Judas repented but found no relief.
 - b. He continued to regret his sin.
 - c. Judas repented of a particular sin, but not of being a sinner.
 - d. Judas didn't get any relief when he confessed his one sin.
 - e. This is shown by the fact that he went out and hung himself.
 - f. His guilt drove him to suicide.
 - g. As long as people repent of particular sins, they don't repent of being a sinner in the first place.
 - 2. Peter – Luke 22:61, 62 - **And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. 62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.**
 - a. When Jesus looked at Peter, he repented.
 - b. Jesus did not look at Judas; therefore Judas did not correctly repent.
 - c. Peter repented and wept bitterly. (To think differently.) He repented not only for what he was, but what he had done.
 - d. Peter got relief when he realized he had denied Christ because of what he was.
 - e. He received forgiveness from Christ, and from then on he was a different person.
 - f. He preached on the Day of Pentecost and 3,000 were saved, baptized and added to the church Jesus organized during his personal ministry, which kind of church still remains on the earth until this day.
- G. Mark 1:15 – **And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel.**
- 1. Matthew 3:2 – John the Baptist's message as he preached was repent and believe.
 - 2. Matthew 4:17 – The first recorded message of Jesus is that sinners must repent and believe.
 - 3. Acts 2:38 – The message on the day of Pentecost was repent and believe.
 - 4. Repentance and faith go together, you cannot have one without the other.

5. One who believes has repented and one who repents will believe.
- H. Acts 11:18 – **When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.**
1. Repentance is not something that a man can work up or out within himself.
 2. Repentance is not a work of man, but in the soul of man.
 3. The Holy Spirit brings about true repentance within a man.
- I. What is Faith?
1. Hebrews 11:1 – **Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.**
 2. Faith is believing what Jesus said, and trusting what he said regardless of circumstances.
 3. Concerning salvation, having faith means we believe God’s word when it condemns us of being a sinner, and of our sins.
 4. We make no excuses, but fully believe we are under eternal condemnation.
 5. We understand we cannot help ourselves, but need help from outside ourselves – and Jesus Christ is the only one that can bridge the gap between us and an most holy, Almighty God.
- J. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
1. Ephesians 2:8 – Faith and grace are given to us by God; we do not earn these, or produce these without him.
 2. I John 5:1 – Believers are born of God, they not born of or by themselves.
- II. WHEREBY BEING DEEPLY CONVICTED OF OUR GUILT, DANGER, AND HELPLESSNESS, AND OF THE WAY OF SALVATION BY CHRIST.
- A. John 16:8 – **And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment:**
1. The Holy Spirit brings conviction of sin.
 2. The Holy Spirit brings light to the soul of the sinner so they can see things as they really are.
 3. Man can only do what he knows to do and that is to sin. He will never repent of his sins until the Holy Spirit convicts him that he is the sinner.
- B. Acts 2:37-38 – **Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do? 38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.**
1. It is the Spirit of God wielding the Sword of God, which is the Word of God at work here in these verses that brings these folks to cry out, “What must we do?”
 2. Baptism is not in order to be saved, but baptism is an identifying mark of the true believer.
- C. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
1. Acts 16:30-31 – The Ephesian jailer was baptized after he repented and believed.

2. The repentance of the jailer was evident when he trembled and fell down before Paul and Silas.
3. His belief was evident as he took Paul and Silas out of the jail and washed their stripes that very night – even as his life was in danger.

III. WE TURN TO GOD WITH UNFEIGNED CONTRITION, CONFESSION, AND SUPPLICATION FOR MERCY.

A. Luke 18:13: the Pharisee and the publican.

1. Here is an example of true repentance, and complete haughtiness.
2. Each person will either truly repent, or completely reject God.

B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are: (The following scriptures are not necessarily speaking about repentance unto salvation, but repentance in general.)

1. Luke 15:18-21 - The prodigal son decides to return home. This parable is not about a sinner coming to salvation, but is coupled with the other three parables of Luke 15 to teach Israel they should be happy when sinners come to Christ and not upset about it.
2. James 4:7-10 - Submit to God, resist the devil, cleanse your hearts, and humble yourself.
3. II Corinthians 7:11 - The Corinthian church repented because of Paul's first letter.
4. Romans 10:12-13 - Jew and Gentile can turn to God for salvation.
5. Psalms 51 - David repents over the sin with Bathsheba.

IV. AT THE SAME TIME HEARTILY RECEIVING THE LORD JESUS CHRIST AS OUR PROPHET, PRIEST, AND KING, AND RELYING ON HIM ALONE AS THE ONLY AND ALL SUFFICIENT SAVIOUR.

A. Romans 10:9-11.

1. Jesus is received as everything the lost sinner needs when they are saved.
2. Salvation is received by faith and confessed with the mouth.

B. When a person is saved they do not mind telling it, in fact they will love to tell it.

C. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:

1. Acts 3:22-23 - Jesus is that prophet spoken of by Moses in Deuteronomy 18:18,19.
2. Hebrews 9:24-28 - Christ was once offered for the sins of many.
3. II Timothy 1:12 - Paul is not ashamed, but knows that Jesus is able to keep him safe in the Day of Judgment.

OF GOD'S PURPOSE AND GRACE

WE BELIEVE THAT ELECTION IS THE ETERNAL PURPOSE OF GOD, ACCORDING TO WHICH HE GRACIOUSLY REGENERATES, SANCTIFIES, AND SAVES SINNERS: THAT BEING PERFECTLY CONSISTENT WITH THE FREE AGENCY OF MAN, IT COMPREHENDS ALL THE MEANS IN CONNECTION WITH THE END: THAT IT IS A MOST GLORIOUS DISPLAY OF GOD'S SOVEREIGN GOODNESS, BEING INFINITELY FREE, WISE, HOLY, AND UNCHANGEABLE: THAT IT UTTERLY EXCLUDES BOASTING AND PROMOTES HUMILITY, LOVE, PRAYER, PRAISE, TRUST IN GOD, AND ACTIVE IMITATION OF HIS FREE MERCY: THAT IT ENCOURAGES THE USE OF MEANS IN THE HIGHEST DEGREE: THAT IT MAY BE ASCERTAINED BY ITS EFFECTS IN ALL WHO TRULY BELIEVE THE GOSPEL: THAT IT IS THE FOUNDATION OF CHRISTIAN ASSURANCE: AND THAT TO ASCERTAIN IT WITH REGARD TO OURSELVES DEMANDS AND DESERVES THE UTMOST DILIGENCE.

- I. WE BELIEVE THAT ELECTION IS THE ETERNAL PURPOSE OF GOD, ACCORDING TO WHICH HE GRACIOUSLY REGENERATES, SANCTIFIES, AND SAVES SINNERS.
 - A. There are four words that deserve our attention in this statement. It should be noted that they are all defined in the Bible.
 1. Election.
 2. Regeneration.
 3. Sanctifies.
 4. Saves.
 - B. Baptists need to get the Bible definition of these words.

ELECTION

Election comes from the word elect, which means, to pick out, to choose out, chosen, given preference, elected but not installed in office.

- A. Those whom God saved are already chosen (elected) unto salvation in Jesus before the world began according to Ephesians 1:3-14.
 1. We were elected unto salvation in eternity, but saved in time.
 2. This gives all the credit, honor, and glory for our salvation unto God alone!
- B. The word elect is used in the Bible seventeen (17) times.
 1. Sixteen of these times it is used concerning people and once concerning angels.
 2. Elected is used one time, election: is used six (6) times, and the word elects is used three (3) times.
 3. In every verse where these words are used it is always God who is doing the electing!
- C. Some false definitions of election.
 1. God voted for you, Satan voted against you, and you cast the deciding vote.
 - a. According to Ephesus 1:4, election was before the foundation of the world, before the creation of angels, including the fallen angel who became Satan.

- b. If Satan had a vote for who would be saved, that would make him equal with God.
 - c. Satan wants to be equal with God, but he never has, nor will he ever be.
 - d. No human had a vote on whether he would be saved or not, because election was made in eternity, before the foundation of the world.
 - e. If any human had a vote on election, that would be the same as that human being equal with God, and that is not so.
2. I have heard some folks say there was a man who wanted to be saved, but God would not save him because he was not one of the elect.
- a. I heard this story when I was a young boy.
 - b. I thought it was terrible, and I still do.
 - c. Would any person be under conviction to be saved, then God refuse to save him? Of course not.
 - d. Of all the people who came to Christ to be healed, how many did Christ refuse to heal? None.
 - e. There were some people in Israel who were not healed of their physical diseases, but those people did not come to Christ to be healed.
 - f. Every person who comes to Christ for salvation, recognizing their sinful, totally depraved condition, completely trusting Christ to save them will be saved.
3. Some believe God has elected some people to go to hell.
- a. This is called double-predestination.
 - b. There is no verse in the entire Bible that declares God elected any person to hell.
 - c. John 3:17-19 states, **For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. 18 He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. 19 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.**
 - d. Men were already condemned by sin, God did not have to condemn them.
4. Some believe God looked down through time, saw all those that would believe, and then elected them to salvation.
- a. If that was so, election is not needed, because, according to this theory, election comes after salvation, not before.
 - b. If that is so, salvation is the cause of election, instead of election being the cause of salvation.
 - c. The fact of total depravity reveals this thought is false.
 - d. There is no scripture in the entire Bible that states that God looked into the future, and elected all those he saw would believe.
 - e. See the point below, under True Biblical Definition of Election which uses Psalm 14:1-4.
5. Some believe election **is** salvation.
- a. There is no scripture that states that election is salvation.
 - b. Election is **unto** salvation, but election is not the same as salvation.

- c. There is a difference in the **time** of election and salvation.
 - 1) God elects us in eternity. Ephesians 1:4 states, **According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love.** The word chosen and the word elect are translated from the same Greek word. This verse teaches us that God elected us to salvation before the foundation of the world.
 - 2) Ephesians 1:13-14 reveals we are saved in time. **In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, 14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.**
- D. The true Biblical definition of election.
 1. God choosing whomsoever he will.
 - a. God's election is not based on any good on our part.
 - b. There is none good, no not one.
 - c. God did not elect Israel as his nation because of any good on their part.
 - d. Deuteronomy 7:7-8 states, **The LORD did not set his love upon you, nor choose you, because ye were more in number than any people; for ye were the fewest of all people: 8 But because the LORD loved you, and because he would keep the oath which he had sworn unto your fathers, hath the LORD brought you out with a mighty hand, and redeemed you out of the house of bondmen, from the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt.**
 2. Our names were written in the Lamb's Book of Life from before the foundation of the world, not when we are saved.
 - a. Revelation 13:8 states **And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.**
 - b. Revelation 17:8 declares **The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.**
 3. Psalm 14:1-3 states, **The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, there is none that doeth good. 2 The LORD looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, and seek God. 3 They are all gone aside, they are all together become filthy: there is none that doeth good, no, not one.**
 - a. Verse two emphatically declares that God looked down through time to see if there were any that did seek God.
 - b. Twice – once in verse 1 and again in verse 3, just in case we didn't get it the first time; God stated that there were none that did seek God.

- c. Those that believe that God looked down through time, and saw those that would believe, therefore elected them to salvation do not have a scripture to base their belief on.
 - d. I, however, have a scripture to state the Bible doctrine that God looked down through time, and saw nobody seeking him; therefore God elected totally depraved sinners to salvation.
 - e. John 15:16 states, **Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.**
4. The changing viewpoint before and after salvation.
- a. Before salvation, each sinner comes to Christ, who is the door of salvation. Above the door are the words, Whosoever Will May Come.
 - b. After salvation, after the sinner goes through the door, he looks back and sees Christ. Above the door are the words, Elected From Before The Foundation of the World.
 - c. Always preach the gospel to the lost – that is what Jesus did.
 - d. After salvation is the time to speak about election, and other Biblical doctrines.
- E. Colossians 3:12-13, **Put on therefore, as THE ELECT OF GOD, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, long-suffering; forbearing one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye.**
1. There can be no mistake about whom Paul is referring to as the Elect of God. The words chosen and choose are translated from the same word as elect.
 2. The elect of God are those whom he has chosen unto salvation.
- F. Example:
1. Mark 13:20 – **And except that the Lord had shortened those days, no flesh should be saved: but for the elect's sake, whom he hath chosen, he hath shortened the days.**
 2. Ephesians 1:4 – **According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:**
 3. II Thessalonians 2:13-14 – **But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth: 14 Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.**
- G. The elect of God are those whom he chose in eternity to be saved in time.
1. Ephesians 1:3-4 - **Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: 4 According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:**
 2. II Timothy 1:9 - **Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began,**

3. Election is not salvation, but unto salvation.
- H. The elect of God are those whom he has chosen to save by his grace and mercy.
 1. This means there was nothing in the creature as the cause or ground of the choice.
 2. Romans 9:11-18 – These verses explain that God has chosen his elect through no value of their own, that God is entirely righteous in whoever he chooses, that God will have mercy on who he will have mercy, that God even raised up Pharaoh and hardened his heart. God will harden or soften hearts at his own will.
 3. I Corinthians 1:26-31 – These verses explain that God has chosen the weak things, the despised thing, and base things to stop all boasting. If there will be any boasting or glorying, that boasting and glorying will be in the Almighty God.

REGENERATION

Regenerates - comes from the word regenerate, which means, to be renewed - to be completely renewed - to form or bring into existence again - to bring into existence anew that which was lost.

- A. Mere man cannot renew what was lost in Adam in the fall.
 1. Regeneration in the Bible means, to be born again.
 2. It is something God must do and he alone is able to do it!
- B. John 3:3 states, **Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.**

SANCTIFIES

Sanctifies - comes from the word sanctify which means to set apart - to cause to pass over - to consecrate - to dedicate.

- A. The word holy, holiness, saint, sanctified, sanctify, or sanctification all have this same meaning.
 1. We who are saved have been set apart, and caused to pass over.
 2. We are sanctified (set apart) from darkness (sin) unto light.
- B. II Thessalonians 2:13 states, **But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth:**

SAVES

Saves - This word is used in reference to salvation, which means, to save, delivered (saved) from danger, evil, difficulty, destruction, delivered from the penalty and power of sin - to be redeemed - to be delivered from the consequences of sin.

- A. God saves sinners out of love and not because of any foreseen faith or works on their part.
- B. God's elect people are saved in time and those who are saved have a genuine experience with the Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.
 1. The blessing of election, regeneration, sanctification, and salvation are all spoken of in the Bible in the book of II Timothy 1:8-9, which states, **Be not therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me His prisoner:**

but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel, according to the power of God who hath saved us and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to His own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began.

2. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 - a. I Peter 1:1-2 – **Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia 2 Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied.**
 - b. Romans 11:5-6 – **Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace. 6 And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.**
 - c. John 15:16 – **Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.**
 - d. I John 4:19 – **We love him, because he first loved us.**
 - e. Hosea 12:9 – **And I that am the LORD thy God from the land of Egypt will yet make thee to dwell in tabernacles, as in the days of the solemn feast.**

II. THAT BEING PERFECTLY CONSISTENT WITH THE FREE AGENCY OF MAN, IT COMPREHENDS ALL THE MEANS IN CONNECTION WITH THE END.

- A. II Thessalonians 2:13-14 – **But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth: 14 Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.**
 1. Paul thanks God in these verses because he had chosen (elected) these folks unto salvation before he created time or the worlds.
 2. Paul also thanked God that he had chosen (elected) the means whereby these folks could be saved, through sanctification and belief of the truth, calling us unto salvation by the preaching of the gospel.
- B. God the Holy Spirit works in such a wonderful and powerful way in the heart and soul of the sinner that he brings them to the place where they want to be saved more than anything else in the world.
 1. When God is finished in his work of grace in the sinners heart they are constrained by love to come to Jesus in repentance and faith.
 2. No one is ever saved except by the means that God has ordained.
 3. I heard a man say he was brought kicking and screaming to Christ for salvation.
 4. I do not believe that is true.

5. God always makes sinners very tired of their sins, their sinfulness, and the result of their wickedness.
- C. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 1. Acts 13:48 – **And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life believed.**
 2. John 10:16 – **And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd.**
 3. Matthew 20:16 – **So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen.**
 4. Acts 15:14 – **Simeon hath declared how God at the first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his name.**

III. THAT IT IS A MOST GLORIOUS DISPLAY OF GOD'S SOVEREIGN GOODNESS, BEING INFINITELY FREE, WISE, HOLY, AND UNCHANGEABLE.

- A. Since God is sovereign in all things he is free to do as he pleases. No one else can do this.
 1. God saves sinners in such a way that he is able to receive all the glory and honor for such a wonderful work.
 2. In saving sinners God does all the work and the sinner enjoys the benefits of it.
- B. Matthew 20:15 – **Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with my own? Is thine eye evil because I am good?**
 1. Exodus 33:18-19 – The Lord is able and free to do with sinners as it pleases him.
 2. Every sinner that is saved is a memorial of God's grace.
 3. If left to ourselves, we would all perish.
 4. God saves sinners in spite of themselves.
 5. That God has purposed in eternity concerning his elect people will never be changed because God is unchangeable.
- C. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 1. Ephesians 1:11 – **In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will:**
 2. Romans 9:23-24 – **And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory, 24 Even us, whom he hath called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles?**
 3. Jeremiah 31:3 – **The LORD hath appeared of old unto me, saying, Yea, I have loved thee with an everlasting love: therefore with lovingkindness have I drawn thee.**
 4. Romans 11:28-29 – **As concerning the gospel, they are enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, they are beloved for the fathers' sakes. 29 For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.**

5. James 1:17-18 – **Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning. 18 Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of firstfruits of his creatures.**
6. II Timothy 1:9 – **Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began,**
7. Romans 11:32-36 – **For God hath concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all. 33 O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out! 34 For who hath known the mind of the Lord? or who hath been his counsellor? 35 Or who hath first given to him, and it shall be recompensed unto him again? 36 For of him, and through him, and to him, are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen.**

IV. THAT IT UTTERLY EXCLUDES BOASTING AND PROMOTES HUMILITY, LOVE, PRAYER, PRAISE, TRUST IN GOD, AND ACTIVE IMITATION OF HIS FREE MERCY.

A. I Corinthians 4:7 – **For who maketh thee to differ from another? And what hast thou that thou didst not receive? Now if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glory, as if thou hadst not received it?**

1. The salvation of God is the greatest gift among men and those whom god saved can only boast in Christ.
2. Romans 3:20, 4:16 – Salvation is not a gift if it is earned. We have received salvation freely through Christ Jesus. .
3. Colossians 3:12-15 – To remember what compassion, mercy, and grace God has freely shown toward us in forgiving us of our sins should move us to practice the same toward our fellowman.
4. I Corinthians 1:26-31 – To remember what we were before we were saved will humble us and motivate us to praise and love him forever. .
5. Those who are truly the elect of God will act like it.

B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:

1. I Corinthians 3:5-7 – **Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos, but ministers by whom ye believed, even as the Lord gave to every man? 6 I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase. 7 So then neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth; but God that giveth the increase.**
2. I Corinthians 15:10 – **But by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which was bestowed upon me was not in vain; but I laboured more abundantly than they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me.**
3. I Peter 5:10 – **But the God of all grace, who hath called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.**
4. Acts 1:24 – **And they prayed, and said, Thou, Lord, which knowest the hearts of all men, shew whether of these two thou hast chosen,**

5. I Thessalonians 2:12-13 – **That ye would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto his kingdom and glory. 13 For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because, when ye received the word of God which ye heard of us, ye received it not as the word of men, but as it is in truth, the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe.**
 6. I Peter 2:9 – **But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:**
 7. Luke 18:7 – **And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them?**
 8. John 15:16 – **Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.**
 9. Ephesians 1:16 – **Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers;**
- V. THAT IT ENCOURAGES THE USE OF MEANS IN THE HIGHEST DEGREE.
- A. Baptists believe:
 1. that the same God who chose them unto salvation also chose the means whereby they would be saved.
 2. that the preaching of the gospel is God's means by which he saves sinners.
 3. that sending and supporting missionaries both at home and in foreign lands is God's way by which the gospel is to be preached to every creature.
 4. that every scriptural means should be used in pointing men, women, boys, and girls to Jesus as Savior!
 - a. II Timothy 2:10 – **Therefore I endure all things for the elect's sakes, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternal glory.**
 - b. I Corinthians 9:22 – **To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some.**
 5. that Christ has already given them the only motive, method, and message needed to get folks saved and new Testament Churches organized.
 - B. Love is the only motive for serving Christ Jesus that God will accept.
 1. Loving to please him because he first loved us.
 2. Galatians 1:4, 2:20 – Loving lost sinners as he loved us and gave himself for us.
 3. Loving his praise rather than man's praise.
 - C. Going to the lost sinner is the method of evangelizing that God accepts.
 1. Visitation is the method that Jesus taught the first church.
 2. Visiting from house to house in every community.
 3. Church members are to go to the lost sinners and not the sinner to the Church.
 4. Gimmicks, worldly entertainment, social affairs, ball games, or other unscriptural programs of men are certainly not God's way of carrying out his commission to the churches.

- D. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
1. Romans 8:28-30 – **And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose. 29 For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. 30 Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.**
 2. John 6:37-40 – **All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out. 38 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. 39 And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day. 40 And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.**
 3. II Peter 1:10 – **Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall:**

VI. THAT IT MAY BE ASCERTAINED BY ITS EFFECTS IN ALL WHO TRULY BELIEVE THE GOSPEL.

- A. The word Ascertained comes from the word ascertain which means, to find out with certainty, to make certain or definite.
1. I Thessalonians 1:4-12 – God's elect people are recognized by what their faith in the gospel produces in their lives. .
 2. The election of God unto salvation is made definite to the believer by their trusting in Jesus Christ as their Savior.
 3. Those whom god has chosen (elected in Christ Jesus before the foundation of the world) are granted faith to believe in Jesus as Savior.
- B. I John 3:1-10 – Those who are truly saved by the grace of God will manifest it in their manner of living.

VII. THAT IT IS THE FOUNDATION OF CHRISTIAN ASSURANCE: AND THAT TO ASCERTAIN IT WITH REGARD TO OURSELVES DEMANDS AND DESERVES THE UTMOST DILIGENCE.

- A. Simply believing what God has said in his Word concerning the purpose of God's grace will bring all the assurance the believer needs in this life to overcome all doubts and fear.
1. Romans 8:28 - **And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to His purpose.**
 - a. Paul tells us that all things work for our good so what can work against us?
 - b. Only those who love God and have the evidence of salvation of their souls can trust this great statement of Paul.
 - c. But how can we know this is true of all God's people? Paul tells us why in the remaining verses of chapter 8.

2. Romans 8:29-30.
 - a. The word “for” connects verse 28 with verse 29.
 - b. The word “for” means because of what God has already done for us.
 - c. The word “for” also gives us assurance of God’s blessings in the future.
 - d. See also:
 - 1.) Romans 11:29 – **For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.**
 - 2.) Isaiah 42:16 – **And I will bring the blind by a way that they knew not; I will lead them in paths that they have not known: I will make darkness light before them, and crooked things straight. These things will I do unto them, and not forsake them.**
- B. When the child of God begins to grasp this great truth it causes them to study and to desire the deeper things of the Word of God concerning his people.
 1. II Peter 1:11 – **For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.**
 2. Philippians 3:12 – **Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus.**
 3. Hebrews 6:11 – **And we desire that every one of you do shew the same diligence to the full assurance of hope unto the end:**
- C. There are two doctrines Baptists have been hated and despised for: the great doctrine of God’s purpose in grace, and the authority of baptism by immersion under the authority of a local New Testament Baptist Church.
 1. You cannot read the truth concerning God’s purpose of grace out of the Holy Scriptures; they will always say the same thing.
 2. From the time Baptist Churches first penned their articles of faith they have always adopted this article along with the others without reservation.
 3. There are those who deny these truths and yet their church has adopted it for one of their articles of faith.
 4. Luke 6:20-28 – The best way to enjoy God’s Word is to believe it even if you cannot explain it.

SANCTIFICATION

WE BELIEVE THAT SANCTIFICATION IS THE PROCESS BY WHICH, ACCORDING TO THE WILL OF GOD, WE ARE MADE PARTAKERS OF HIS HOLINESS; THAT IT IS A PROGRESSIVE WORK; THAT IT IS BEGUN IN REGENERATION; AND THAT IT IS CARRIED ON IN THE HEARTS OF BELIEVERS BY THE PRESENCE AND POWER OF THE HOLY SPIRIT, THE SEALER AND COMFORTER, IN THE CONTINUAL USE OF THE APPOINTED MEANS - ESPECIALLY, THE WORD OF GOD, SELF-EXAMINATION, SELF-DENIAL, WATCHFULNESS, AND PRAYER.

- I. WE BELIEVE THAT SANCTIFICATION IS THE PROCESS BY WHICH, ACCORDING TO THE WILL OF GOD, WE ARE MADE PARTAKERS OF HIS HOLINESS.
- A. I Thessalonians 4:3-5 – **For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication: 4 That every one of you should know how to possess his vessel in sanctification and honour; 5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles which know not God:**
1. Paul is speaking to saved people in this verse.
 2. He tells them it is God’s will for them to be sanctified.
 3. Saved people become partakers of God’s holiness by sanctification.
- B. In order to understand the doctrine of sanctification, we must understand what the word means.
1. Sanctification does not mean to get better and better until some condition of sinless perfection is reached.
 2. The words saint, sanctuary, holiness, and sanctification are from the same root work, which means to set apart, or to cause to pass over.
 3. By comparing Exodus 13:2, with Exodus 13:12, we get the Bible meaning of the word sanctify.
 - a. In Exodus 13:2, God says, **Sanctify unto me all the firstborn, whatsoever openeth the womb among the children of Israel, both of man and beast: it is mine.**
 - b. In verse 12 the same command is repeated but instead of the word sanctify, the words set apart (margin: “to cause to pass over) are used.
 - c. The thought is that of separating from and setting apart to or causing to pass over to.
 - d. The firstborn Israelite was separated from the other children in the home and considered the peculiar possession of the Lord on the ground that the death angel passed over the house, sparing the fate of the first-born Egyptian. (C. D. Cole)
- C. We find that people and things can be sanctified (set aside) for both good and bad purposes.
1. Genesis 38 – When Tamar played the harlot, she sanctified (set aside) herself for an evil purpose.
 2. Ruth the Moabitess sanctified (set aside) herself for honorable purposes.
 3. Rahab the harlot was set aside for evil, then set aside for good.

4. Isaiah 66:17 **They that sanctify themselves, and purify themselves in the garden behind one tree in the midst, eating swine's flesh, and the abomination, and the mouse, shall be consumed together saith the Lord.**
 - a. This verse is speaking of idolaters as sanctifying **themselves**, which means they separated themselves from the true congregation of Israel to engage in idolatrous worship.
 - b. The word purify speaks of ceremonial cleansing, not actual (spiritual) cleansing.
 - c. It is obvious that the **appearance** of purity can be vastly different from actual purity.
- D. We find that vessels, beasts and a mountain (things without moral value) are sanctified.
 1. Sin in these things was not the object of sanctification, but they were simply separated from one use and set apart to another use.
 2. A car could be set aside (sanctified) for racing. This car should not be driven on the street.
- E. There is a two fold sense of the word sanctify in the Bible.
 1. Sanctified unto salvation.
 - a. Hebrews 10:10 states, **By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.**
 - b. Hebrews 13:12 states, **Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate.**
 - c. II Peter 1:2 states, **Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied.**
 - d. All of the above verses speak about our being separated unto God for the salvation of the spirit; the forgiveness of sins.
 2. Sanctified unto works; which is progressive, or continuing.
 - a. This is the primary meaning of the word sanctification, but it must be clearly understood that sanctification in the body is the result of sanctification in the spirit, not the cause.
 - b. The remainder of this message will be to explain progressive sanctification as taught in the Bible.
 - c. Ephesians 2:8-10 gives the proper progression of sanctification.
 - 1) We are saved by grace through faith, without works on our part.
 - 2) Salvation of the spirit is entirely a work of grace from God.
 - 3) After salvation, we save our lives by obeying God's Biblical commands.
 - 4) Philippians 2:12 – We work out (perform, accomplish, or achieve) our spiritual salvation in these physical bodies (which is the salvation of the life – the salvation of the body is accomplished at the resurrection).
- F. The idea that sanctification is a second work of grace whereby the person is made absolutely sinless in this life is false.
 1. There is no such thing as a person never sinning in this life.

2. I John 1:8-10 states, **If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. 9 If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. 10 If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.**
 3. I once spoke to a young lady who told me she did not sin any more.
 - a. She said she made mistakes, but did not sin.
 - b. To her, a sin was against God, while a mistake is an error of the flesh that affects only people.
 - c. A mistake is physical, fleshly, and has nothing at all to do with the spirit.
 - d. A mistake would be turning left when you intended to turn right.
 - e. A mistake would be saying one thing, but you meant to say another.
 - f. Those things are mistakes; they are not sins.
 - g. But if God told you to do one thing and you did another, or you did not follow him perfectly in this body, that is a sin.
 4. I believe she was referring to I John 3:4-10, which states, **Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law. 5 And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sins; and in him is no sin. 6 Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not: whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him. 7 Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doeth righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous. 8 He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil. 9 Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. 10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.**
 - a. These verses are not speaking about sinless perfection in this life, in this body, or in this mind.
 - b. These verses are speaking about the eternal spirit, not the temporary body or mind.
 - c. These verses do not contradict I John 1:8 and 10.
 - d. These verses can give the believer much confidence in this life, while never relating the thought of sinless perfection.
- G. Our sanctification is:
1. **Positional** - We are separated from one position (the sinner) to the position of a saint.
 2. **Eternal** - Hebrews 10:14 states, **For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.**
 - a. In Christ the believer is holy forever.
 - b. He is eternally perfect; therefore we are eternally perfect.
 3. **Absolute** - In Christ, we are as holy, I John 4:17 states, **Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he is, so are we in this world.**

- a. Our love is made perfect (complete, or perfected) when we understand the love Christ (who is God Almighty) has for us.
 - b. The love of God will cause us to have boldness in the day of judgment.
 - c. There is no need for the saved, scripturally baptized, progressively sanctified person to have fear of the judgment.
 - d. **Because as he is, so are we in this world.**
- H. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
1. I Thessalonians 5:23 – **And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.**
 2. II Corinthians 7:1 – **Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.**
 3. II Corinthians 13:9 – **For we are glad, when we are weak, and ye are strong; and this also we wish, even your perfection.**
 4. Ephesians 1:4 – **According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:**

II. THAT IT IS A PROGRESSIVE WORK.

- A. There is a progressive sanctification in the life of the believer that takes place day by day.
1. This has to do with our daily walk, or every day life. It is a personal and practical sanctification.
 2. Proverbs 4:18 states **The path of the just is as the shining light which shineth more and more unto the perfect day.** (Progressive sanctification)
 3. II Peter 1:5-18 - Believers are to grow in the grace and the knowledge of Jesus Christ.
 4. Sanctification is growing in the things of God and getting away from the things of the world.
- B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
1. II Corinthians 3:18 – **But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.**
 2. Hebrews 6:1 – **Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God,**
 3. Philippians 3:12-16 – **Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus. 13 Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, 14 I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus. 15 Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you.**

16 Nevertheless, whereto we have already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us mind the same thing.

III. THAT IT IS BEGUN IN REGENERATION; AND THAT IT IS CARRIED ON IN THE HEARTS OF BELIEVERS BY THE PRESENCE AND POWER OF THE HOLY SPIRIT, THE SEALER AND COMFORTER, IN THE CONTINUAL USE OF THE APPOINTED MEANS - ESPECIALLY, THE WORD OF GOD, SELF-EXAMINATION, SELF-DENIAL, WATCHFULNESS, AND PRAYER.

- A. I John 2:29 – **If ye know that he is righteous, ye know that every one that doeth righteousness is born of him.**
1. John says that everyone who continues or keeps on practicing righteousness has been born of God, or in other words, they are continuing on in the practice of living righteously *because of the new birth*.
 2. The Spirit of God who brings about the new birth keeps on working in the life of the saved.
 3. Those who profess to be saved and continually and habitually practice sin have never been born again!
- B. We are sanctified by the Word of God.
1. John 17:17 – **Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.**
 - a. The word of God has a separating influence upon the life of the believer. If the word has small place in our life, sin will have a large place, and if the Word has a large place in our life, then sin will have a small place.
 - b. An increased desire for the Word will mean a decrease in the desire for sin.
 2. Sin will keep us from the Word or the Word will keep us from sin. (C. D. Cole)
 3. Romans 8:5 **They that are after the flesh, do mind the things of the flesh, but they that are after the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.**
- C. We are sanctified by the Spirit of God.
1. Philippians 2:12-13 – **Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling. 13 For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure.**
 - a. Sanctification is a divine work and a human obligation.
 - b. As believers, we receive grace from God, enabling us to work out our salvation.
 2. II Thessalonians 2:13 – **But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth:** It is all of God!
- D. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
1. John 3:6 – **That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.**
 2. Philippians 1:9-11 – **And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge and in all judgment; 10 That ye may approve things that are excellent; that ye may be sincere and without offence till**

- the day of Christ; 11 Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ, unto the glory and praise of God.**
3. Ephesians 1:13-14 – **In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, 14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.**
 4. Ephesians 4:11-12 – **And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; 12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ:**
 5. I Peter 2:2 – **As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:**
 6. II Peter 3:18 – **But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and for ever. Amen.**
 7. II Corinthians 13:5 – **Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your own selves. Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?**
 8. Luke 11:35 – **Take heed therefore that the light which is in thee be not darkness.**
 9. Luke 9:23 – **And he said to them all, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me.**
 10. Matthew 26:41 – **Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.**
 11. Ephesians 6:18 – **Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints;**
 12. Ephesians 4:30 – **And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.**

PERSEVERANCE OF THE SAINTS

WE BELIEVE THAT SUCH ONLY ARE REAL BELIEVERS AS ENDURE UNTO THE END; THAT THEIR PRESERVING ATTACHMENT TO CHRIST IS THE GRAND MARK WHICH DISTINGUISHES THEM FROM SUPERFICIAL PROFESSORS; THAT A SPECIAL PROVIDENCE WATCHES OVER THEIR WELFARE, AND THAT THEY ARE KEPT BY THE POWER OF GOD THROUGH FAITH UNTO SALVATION.

- I. WE BELIEVE THAT SUCH ONLY ARE REAL BELIEVERS AS ENDURE UNTO THE END.
 - A. This statement is speaking about the motivation of the true saint of God, and does not reflect the fact that some who are true believers do not show in their bodies the grace of God in obedience.
 1. Matthew 24:13 states, **But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.**
 2. The true saint of God will either be faithful to God and rejoice in God, or rebel against God and be chastened by God.
 3. It is not exactly once saved, always saved; although that thought is correct.
 - a. All hell-raisers, all wicked, and all who continue in sin will go to hell.
 - b. All those who are trusting in their walking a church aisle many years ago, being baptized, and having their names on a church roll somewhere, will go to hell.
 - c. The only way any person can go to heaven is by repenting of their sinfulness and believing (complete dependence) on Jesus Christ.
 - d. When a person is truly saved, their lives will change and they will walk after Christ, not after wickedness.
 4. It is that only real believers **can** continue.
 5. A person can continue only with the power of God upon them.
 6. The way to tell whether a person is a real believer is whether or not they continue faithful to God in all circumstances.
 7. We must also understand that our knowledge of people is always inexact, and sometimes wrong.
 8. God always knows the heart; we only see what is on the outside.
 9. Their continuing with God will likely not be perfect, but it will be there.
 - B. We are looking at the perseverance of the saints in a positive way.
 1. II Peter 1:10 states that every true believer should make his calling and election sure.
 2. Philippians 2:12 reveals that every true believer should work out their own salvation with fear and trembling.
 3. It is a most terrible thought for a person to believe they are saved, yet die and go to hell.
 4. We are not trusting in the power of positive thinking, but on the promises of God.
 - C. I Thessalonians 1:4 states, **Knowing, brethren beloved, your election of God.**
 1. How did Paul know these people were the elect of God? By evidence.
 2. Verse 5 states,

- a. The gospel came to them in word.
 - b. The gospel came to them in power.
 - c. The gospel came to them in the Holy Spirit.
 - d. The gospel came to them in much assurance.
 - e. Verse 6 reveals these people became followers of Paul and of the Lord, even though there was much affliction at the time.
 - f. Verse 7 states they were examples to all believers because:
 - 1) Verse 8 – They were missionary to all.
 - 2) Verse 9 – They turned from their former life to serve the living God, and to wait for the rapture.
- D. Those that cannot continue.
1. John 8:31 - **Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed;**
 2. Jesus said that only those who are genuinely saved would continue in his Word.
 3. Saved people are not saved because they continue in his Word, but continue in his Word because they are saved.
 4. It is a perversion of the doctrine of eternal security to believe that a saved person can continue in sin.
- E. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
1. I John 2:27-28 - **But the anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him. 28 And now, little children, abide in him; that, when he shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his coming.**
 2. I John 3:9 - **Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.**
 3. I John 5:18 - **We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.**
 4. Colossians 1:23 - **If ye continue in the faith grounded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, and which was preached to every creature which is under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister;**
- F. While we have stated that only true believers endure to the end, it must be understood that some who are true believers will *not* endure, in what *we* call faithful to the end.
1. Lot was a saved man who was unfaithful to God.
 - a. Genesis 13:10 declares that Lot chose the well watered plains of Sodom, and moved his family into the wicked city and reaped the consequences of his erroneous decision.
 - b. II Peter 2:6-8 describes the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah and the rescue of Lot, his wife and their two daughters from that wicked city.
 - c. Genesis 19:17-23 – When Lot left Sodom, he desired to go to Zoar, instead of to the mountains as God commanded.

- d. Lot committed incest with his two daughters.
 - e. If the Bible (in II Peter 2:6-8) had not called Lot righteous, we would not have known he was saved.
 2. Numbers 22 – Balaam was a prophet of the Lord, who would have taken money to curse Israel, God’s chosen nation.
 - a. God would not allow this prophet to curse Israel.
 - b. Numbers 23:10 – **Who can count the dust of Jacob, and the number of the fourth part of Israel? Let me die the death of the righteous, and let my last end be like his!**
 - c. If Balaam had lived like he wanted to die, he would have died like he wanted.
 - d. Numbers 31:8 and Joshua 13:22 – the people of Israel killed Balaam when they invaded the land of Canaan, particularly the land of Median.
 - e. We can only suppose Balaam was a true believer because he was a prophet of God.
 3. Saved yet so as by fire.
 - a. I Corinthians 3:15 – I believe these verses are talking about saved people and how God will judge their works.
 - b. All works that are not done for God will be burned, but the spirit of the person will still be saved.
- II. THAT THEIR PRESERVING ATTACHMENT TO CHRIST IS THE GRAND MARK WHICH DISTINGUISHES THEM FROM SUPERFICIAL PROFESSORS.
- A. I John 2:19 states, **They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us.**
1. These folks that John spoke of were people who professed to be saved and members of a Baptist Church.
 2. John says they went out from (or separated themselves from true believers and Baptists) because they were not of God’s true people to start with.
 3. These folks did not hold out or endure because they were not of the Lord.
 4. The very thing that distinguishes a true child of God is their willingness to endure all things for Christ who strengthens them.
- B. John 13:18 states, **I speak not of you all: I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me.**
1. Those whom God has chosen to be saved in Christ will not only be saved, but will preserve to the end.
 2. God’s plan for redemption will not be destroyed because there are false professors who do not “hold out”.
- C. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
1. Matthew 13:20-21 – **But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it; 21 Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended.**

2. John 6:66-69 – **From that time many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him. 67 Then said Jesus unto the twelve, Will ye also go away? 68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life. 69 And we believe and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God.**
3. Job 17:9 – **I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine.**

III. THAT A SPECIAL PROVIDENCE WATCHES OVER THEIR WELFARE.

- A. Romans 8:28 declares, **And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.**
 1. We who are saved can be assured that all things will work together for good for us because of what Paul says in the following verses of this same chapter.
 2. As far as God is concerned, the saved have already held out to the end.
- B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 1. Matthew 6:30-33 – **Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith? 31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed? 32 (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek:) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. 33 But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.**
 2. Jeremiah 32:40 – **And I will make an everlasting covenant with them, that I will not turn away from them, to do them good; but I will put my fear in their hearts, that they shall not depart from me.**
 3. Psalms 121:3 – **He will not suffer thy foot to be moved: he that keepeth thee will not slumber.**
 4. Psalms 91:11-12 – **For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. 12 They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone.**

IV. AND THAT THEY ARE KEPT BY THE POWER OF GOD THROUGH FAITH UNTO SALVATION.

- A. Philippians 1:6 states, **Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ:**
 1. This verse applies first of all to Baptist churches and then is just as applicable to the saved person as well.
 2. God never starts anything he doesn't intend to finish.
 3. Those who are saved will stay saved by the power of God.
- B. Philippians 2:12-13 states, **Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling. 13 For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure.**
 1. We are to work out our salvation, but you can't work out something you don't have.

2. You must have salvation full and complete before you can work it out.
 3. You must have a garden before you can work it out.
 4. Paul says, **...it is God that worketh in you both to will and to do of His good pleasure.**
 5. He will work nothing out that pleases God if he does not work it in us to do it.
- C. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
1. Jude 24-25 – **Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy, 25 To the only wise God, our Saviour, be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen.**
 2. Hebrews 1:14 – **Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?**
 3. II Kings 6:16 – **And he answered, Fear not: for they that be with us are more than they that be with them.**
 4. Hebrews 13:5 – **Let your conversation be without covetousness; and be content with such things as ye have: for he hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.**
 5. I John 4:4 – **Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world.**

OF THE HARMONY OF THE LAW AND THE GOSPEL

WE BELIEVE THAT THE LAW OF GOD IS THE ETERNAL AND UNCHANGEABLE RULE OF HIS MORAL GOVERNMENT; THAT IT IS HOLY, JUST, AND GOOD: AND THAT THE INABILITY WHICH THE SCRIPTURES ASCRIBE TO FALLEN MEN TO FULFILL ITS PRECEPTS, ARISES ENTIRELY FROM THEIR LOVE OF SIN: TO DELIVER THEM FROM WHICH, AND TO RESTORE THEM THROUGH A MEDIATOR TO UNFEIGNED OBEDIENCE TO THE HOLY LAW, IS ONE GREAT END OF THE GOSPEL, AND OF THE MEANS OF GRACE CONNECTED WITH THE ESTABLISHMENT OF THE VISIBLE CHURCH.

I. WE BELIEVE THAT THE LAW OF GOD IS THE ETERNAL AND UNCHANGEABLE RULE OF HIS MORAL GOVERNMENT

A. There was never a time that God established his law.

1. Psalms 119:142 states, **Thy righteousness is an everlasting righteousness, and thy law is the truth.**
 - a. Just as the righteousness of God is everlasting, so is his law everlasting.
 - b. Truth never changes, just as God never changes.
2. Deuteronomy 29:29 – **The secret things belong unto the LORD our God: but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever, that we may do all the words of this law.**
 - a. The only way to please the eternal God is by keeping his eternal law.
 - b. God has revealed to us his law so we will know how to please him.
 - c. It is an error to believe the law is not needed today because Christ has paid for all our sins.
 - d. Old Testament saints needed the law and Christ also paid for all their sins.
 - e. If we do not have the law of God, we do not have the means necessary to know how to please God.
3. Psalms 119:44 – **So shall I keep thy law continually for ever and ever.**
 - a. The law of God is eternal just as God is eternal.
 - b. The law of God describes who God is and what he expects if we are to be like him.
 - c. The law of God is an integral part of God and cannot be separated from God.
 - d. To know the law of God is to understand God.
 - e. To keep the law of God is to be like God.
 - f. To break the law of God separates from God, but to keep the law is to join to God.
4. When Adam broke the law of God in the Garden of Eden, he was separated from God both spiritually and physically.

B. The law of God is eternal and unchangeable and men are responsible toward God to obey its every precept.

1. The law of God reveals how God will deal with man.
2. The law reveals what is holy and unholy to God.
3. The law also reveals how God will reward holiness and judge un-holiness.

- C. When a person acknowledges their lost and undone condition before God and confesses not only that they are lawbreakers, but they are unable to keep the law in themselves they admit that God's law is right.
 - 1. Romans 3:31 states, **But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets;**
 - 2. Jesus, perfectly and to the letter, kept the law of God during his lifetime on earth for and in behalf of every lost sinner that is saved by the grace of God.
 - 3. Matthew 5:17 states, **Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil.**
 - 4. Luke 16:17 – **And it is easier for heaven and earth to pass, than one tittle of the law to fail.**
 - 5. Romans 4:15 – **Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression.**

II. THAT IT IS HOLY, JUST, AND GOOD

- A. Romans 7:12 – **Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good.**
- B. Romans 7:7 – **What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet.**
- C. Romans 7:14 – **For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin.**
- D. Romans 7:22 – **For I delight in the law of God after the inward man:**
- E. Galatians 3:21 – **Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law.**
- F. Psalm 119 – Every verse in this Psalm speaks of the preciousness of the law of God.
 - 1. Psalm 119 uses different words to describe the word of God.
 - 2. Those words are:
 - a. Law
 - b. Testimony
 - c. Ways
 - d. Precepts
 - e. Statutes
 - f. Commandments
 - g. Judgments
 - h. Word

III. AND THAT THE INABILITY WHICH THE SCRIPTURES ASCRIBE TO FALLEN MEN TO FULFILL ITS PRECEPTS ARISES ENTIRELY FROM THEIR LOVE OF SIN

- A. Since men are depraved or crooked through and through they are unable to live their lives according to God's holy law. Romans 8:7-8 – **Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. 8 So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.**

1. Since man is born with a desire to love sin rather than God they are unable to keep the law of God. John 3:18-19 declares, **He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. 19 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.**
2. In John 6:44, Jesus himself said, **No man can come to me (by and through his own power), except the Father which hath sent me draw Him...**
- B. The law of God teaches man that he is a sinner against God.
 1. Romans 3:20 states, **Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.**
 2. Galatians 3:19-25 declares, **Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. 20 Now a mediator is not a mediator of one, but God is one. 21 Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law. 22 But the scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe. 23 But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed. 24 Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. 25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.**
 3. Joshua 24:19 – **And Joshua said unto the people, Ye cannot serve the LORD: for he is an holy God; he is a jealous God; he will not forgive your transgressions nor your sins.**
 4. Jeremiah 13:23 – **Can the Ethiopian change his skin, or the leopard his spots? then may ye also do good, that are accustomed to do evil.**
 5. John 6:44 – **No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.**
 6. John 5:44 – **How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only?**

IV. TO DELIVER THEM FROM WHICH, AND TO RESTORE THEM THROUGH A MEDIATOR TO UNFEIGNED OBEDIENCE TO THE HOLY LAW, IS ONE GREAT END OF THE GOSPEL, AND OF THE MEANS OF GRACE CONNECTED WITH THE ESTABLISHMENT OF THE VISIBLE CHURCH

- A. The law of God and God's grace work together for the salvation of lost sinners.
 1. The law teaches what we are and grace saves us from it.
 - a. Romans 8:2-4 states, **For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death. 3 For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: 4 That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.**

- b. The Spirit of God sets us free from sin and death as he uses the gospel of Jesus Christ to point out our need for the righteousness of God that is found in him.
 2. The law is not weak, but it is because of the depravity and weakness of man that it cannot save sinners.
 - a. The law of God is not given to save sinners, but to point them to God's marvelous grace that does save through his Son Jesus.
 - b. Christ does not save men because they keep the law.
 - c. Christ keeps the law for men, because he is the perfect righteousness of God.
 - d. Romans 10:4 states, **For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.**
 3. There is only one person that is able to stand before God in behalf of the sinner, Christ Jesus the mediator. I Timothy 2:5,6 states, **For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; 6 Who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time.**
 - a. Because of God's great love for us, even when we refused to love him, we now serve God through Christ.
 - b. Saved people are to live for Jesus.
 4. The Church is the divine institution that God has ordained to teach his people how to live.
 - a. The Church of the Lord Jesus Christ is the only organization in the world that has divine authority to preach the gospel, baptize those who are saved through the preaching, and to teach them to observe (how to live) all things whatsoever Christ Jesus has commanded them.
 - b. There are other organizations that preach, baptize people and teach the Bible, but that does not mean God gave them authority to do so.
 - B. Scriptures that teach saved people serve the Lord through obedience of the Spirit, which continually leads to obedience by understanding and obeying the law of God.
 1. Rom 8:2-4 – **For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death. 3 For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: 4 That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.**
 2. Romans 10:4 – **For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.**
 3. I Timothy 1:5 – **Now the end of the commandment is charity out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned:**
 4. Hebrews 8:10 – **For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people:**

5. Jude 20-21 – **But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghost, 21 Keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life.**
6. Hebrews 12:14 – **Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord:**
- C. God has established his kind of church upon this earth so we can come to a complete knowledge and fellowship with God.
 1. Matthew 16:17-18 – **And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. 18 And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.**
 2. I Corinthians 12:28 – **And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues.**
 - a. God has given authority to his kind of churches to preach the gospel to every creature.
 - b. People that are not members of the Lord's church can preach the gospel, but they have no authority to do so.
 - c. God will always bless his word, regardless of who preaches it.
 - d. God has promised to be with his kind of church until the end of the age, therefore the gospel will be preserved in its pureness and completeness.
 3. Ephesians 4:11-16 states, **And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; 12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: 13 Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: 14 That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; 15 But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: 16 From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.**
 - a. God has given us everything we need in this present world to prepare us for the world to come.
 - b. No saved person will ever have an excuse for not being what God intended him to be.
 - c. No saved person will ever have an excuse for not helping those around him be what God intends them to be.

A NEW TESTAMENT BAPTIST CHURCH

A NEW TESTAMENT BAPTIST CHURCH IS A CONGREGATION OF BAPTIZED BELIEVERS, ASSOCIATED BY COVENANT IN THE FAITH AND FELLOWSHIP OF THE GOSPEL, OBSERVING THE ORDINANCES OF BAPTISM AND THE LORD'S SUPPER AS GIVEN BY CHRIST; GOVERNED BY HIS LAWS AND EXERCISING THE GIFTS, RIGHTS, AND PRIVILEGES INVESTED IN THEM BY HIS WORD, AND THAT ITS ONLY SCRIPTURAL OFFICERS ARE BISHOPS OR PASTORS AND DEACONS.

I. IS A CONGREGATION OF BAPTIZED BELIEVERS.

- A. Every place you read of the church, the definition will always include references to the invisible universal church. The Bible is the only exception to this rule.
 - 1. This is so sad, as the word ekklesia always means an assembly, and all the saved people together cannot be assembled – at least not in this world.
 - 2. In the world to come, all the church is together, but they are also assembled.
- B. Men give three definitions of the word church.
 - 1. Local visible – Baptists. These are the first churches.
 - 2. Visible universal – Catholics. These churches followed after because they rejected the truth of the Bible.
 - 3. Invisible, universal – Protestants Reformers. These churches did not like the definition of the word church used by so called radicals to the right – which are Baptists (although they were called many different names), and they did not like the Catholic (universal) church, so they dubbed their universal church invisible instead of visible.
- C. The first thing that needs to be done is to let the Bible define the word church. The word church is taken from the Greek word ekklesia.
 - 1. Derived probably from the Greek kuriakon (i.e., the Lord's house), which was used by ancient authors for the place of worship. In the New Testament it is the translation of the Greek word ecclesia, which is synonymous with the Hebrew kahal of the Old Testament, both words meaning simply an assembly, the character of which can only be known from the connection in which the word is found. There is no clear instance of its being used for a place of meeting or of worship, although in post-apostolic times it early received this meaning. Nor is this word ever used to denote the inhabitants of a country united in the same profession, as when we say the Church of England, the Church of Scotland, etc.
 - 2. The word Ekklesia appears 116 times in the New Testament, 113 times it is translated church or churches and three times it is translated assembly:
 - a. The word ekklesia is translated assembly in Acts 19:32, 39, and 41.
 - b. All of these times concern the riot in the city of Ephesus over the supposed plot by Paul and the disciples to destroy the economy created by the manufacture of idols to the goddess Diana.
 - 3. The word ekklesia is translated into the plural “churches” 36 times, and into the singular “church” 77 times.

- a. It becomes very clear by studying these various words that the word “church” always speaks about a particular church, or the church as an institution, never to a group of churches.
 - b. The word “churches” is always used when reference is made to more than one church.
4. Jesus used the word ekklesia 22 times; the singular form 10 times and the plural form 12 times, making it very clear that Jesus thought of the church he organized during his own personal ministry as a local, visible church. When Jesus spoke of more than one church, he always used the plural.
- a. Matthew 16:18 – singular.
 - b. Matthew 18:17 – singular.
 - c. Matthew 18:17 – singular.
 - d. Revelation 1:11 – plural.
 - e. Revelation 1:20 – plural.
 - f. Revelation 1:20 – plural.
 - g. Revelation 2:1 – singular.
 - h. Revelation 2:7 – plural.
 - i. Revelation 2:8 – singular.
 - j. Revelation 2:11 – plural.
 - k. Revelation 2:12 – singular.
 - l. Revelation 2:17 – plural.
 - m. Revelation 2:18 – singular.
 - n. Revelation 2:23 – plural.
 - o. Revelation 2:29 – plural.
 - p. Revelation 3:1 – singular.
 - q. Revelation 3:6 – plural.
 - r. Revelation 3:7 – singular.
 - s. Revelation 3:13 – plural.
 - t. Revelation 3:14 – singular.
 - u. Revelation 3:22 – plural.
 - v. Revelation 22:16 – plural.
- D. See Acts 19:37 – **For ye have brought hither these men, which are neither robbers of churches, nor yet blasphemers of your goddess.**
1. The words “robbers of churches” is not the word ekklesia at all.
 2. It is the Greek word hierosulos, Strong’s number G2417, which means “robbers of churches”.
 3. This Greek word is only used one time in the entire Bible.
- E. The word church used in the institutional sense.
1. Ephesians 5:23, 25, 27, and 29.
 - a. It is very important to understand that Ephesians is written to a local church.
 - b. In these verses the church (in an institutional sense) is clearly seen being compared to the husband and wife (also in an institutional sense).
 - c. There is no such thing as one huge, visible, or invisible husband or wife.
 - d. All of these husbands and wives are local, and visible.
 - e. There is also no such thing as one huge, visible, or invisible church.

- f. All these churches are local, visible, and singular.
 - g. There is no doubt in my mind that in eternity, God has a special place for all his churches, just like he has a special place for Israel.
 - h. In eternity all the church will be gathered together as one – but they will still be local and they will still be visible, just as Israel will be local and visible.
2. Hebrews 12:23.
- a. This verse refers to the two separate, distinct and complete groups in heaven.
 - b. One is the general assembly – Israel.
 - c. The other is the church of the firstborn – the local churches of this earth put together in heaven.
- F. The church in a house - A few Christians associated together in observing the ordinances of the gospel are an ecclesia.
- 1. Romans 16:5 – **Likewise greet the church that is in their house. Salute my well beloved Epaenetus, who is the firstfruits of Achaia unto Christ.**
 - 2. Colossians 4:15 – **Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the church which is in his house.**
- G. Every time a form of the word “assemble” is used in the Bible, it is not the Greek work “ekkllesia”.
- 1. There are twelve times a form of the word assemble is found in the New Testament, and is not ekklesia.
 - 2. I believe it is important to study the form of the word assembly to clearly understand there is a difference between people gathering together and gathering together in church capacity.
 - a. Matthew 26:3 - **Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas,** This is a legal assembly, not a church, that is gathered together.
 - b. Matthew 26:57 – **And they that had laid hold on Jesus led him away to Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were assembled.** Here these hypocrites are gathered together to commence a illegal trial for the purpose of convicting Christ of being God.
 - c. Matthew 28:12 – **And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers,** This assembly is also not a church, but a gathering together of people to determine a course of action.
 - d. Mark 14:53 – **And they led Jesus away to the high priest: and with him were assembled all the chief priests and the elders and the scribes.** These chief priests and elders and scribes were gathered together to consider how to kill Christ.
 - e. John 20:19 – **Then the same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.** The early church is gathered together. The

word assembled is much better than the word church, which does not make sense in the sentence.

- f. Acts 1:4 – **And, being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which, saith he, ye have heard of me.** Jesus is here gathered together with his church, which is a local assembly, and gives them instructions.
- g. Acts 4:31 – **And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together; and they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldness.** This church was gathered together, and God blessed their assembly and the prayer they collectively prayed for strength.
- h. Acts 11:26 – **And when he had found him, he brought him unto Antioch. And it came to pass, that a whole year they assembled themselves with the church, and taught much people. And the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch.** These people did not church themselves together, but gathered together in an orderly assembly for the purpose of worshipping God.
- i. Acts 15:25 – **It seemed good unto us, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men unto you with our beloved Barnabas and Paul,** James states in this letter that the church being assembled together have considered the issue at hand and gives the following advice.
- j. Hebrews 10:25 – **Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.** This passage is clearly speaking of assembling (gathering together) in church capacity.
- k. Hebrews 12:23 – **To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect,**
 - 1) The context of this passage speaks about Mount Zion, heavenly Jerusalem, where an innumerable company of angels are gathered together with the assembly of all the saved of all ages, and the church of Jesus Christ.
 - 2) This assembly is in heaven, not upon this earth.
 - 3) All the saved of all the ages will be gathered together in the New Jerusalem.
 - 4) The church of the Lord Jesus Christ will also be there, in a special place chosen for them by Christ.
 - 5) The context of this passage speaks of many things that will be in eternity: angels, all the saved, the assembled church of Christ, all who are written in heaven, God the judge of all, the spirits of just men, Jesus and the blood of Christ.
- l. James 2:2 – **For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment;** James did not use the word church, but the Greek “sunagoge”, which is also translated synagogue.

- H. All of the New Testament is written to churches or individuals.
 - 1. When Christ inspired the apostles to write the 27 books of the New Testament, none of the letters were written to a convention headquarters.
 - a. At least seven of the books were written to local churches, eight to groups of people, of whom the bigger part was churches, four were addressed to an unknown people, and eight were written to individuals.
 - b. It must be that the invisible or visible universal church, all boards, associations, and conventions, have no word from God at all.
 - c. We ought to be careful what we put our stamp of approval on.
 - 2. Every person should read to whom the various books of the Bible are written.
 - a. This is a good spiritual exercise in discerning to whom God gives instructions.
 - b. If an individual wants to receive instruction from God he must put himself in the place where instructions are given.
- I. **I Corinthians 1:1-13 – Paul, called to be an apostle of Jesus Christ through the will of God, and Sosthenes our brother, 2 Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours: 3 Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ. 4 I thank my God always on your behalf, for the grace of God which is given you by Jesus Christ; 5 That in every thing ye are enriched by him, in all utterance, and in all knowledge; 6 Even as the testimony of Christ was confirmed in you: 7 So that ye come behind in no gift; waiting for the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ: 8 Who shall also confirm you unto the end, that ye may be blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ. 9 God is faithful, by whom ye were called unto the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord. 10 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment. 11 For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them which are of the house of Chloe, that there are contentions among you. 12 Now this I say, that every one of you saith, I am of Paul; and I of Apollos; and I of Cephas; and I of Christ. 13 Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?**
 - 1. Verse 1 - The writer is Paul.
 - 2. Verse 2 - The local church at Corinth is the recipient.
 - 3. Verse 4 - Paul thanked God for that particular local church.
 - 4. Verse 10-13 - Paul rebukes and instructs these baptized believers as a church, a local particular group of baptized believers in Corinth.
- J. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 - 1. Matthew 18:17 – **And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican.**
 - a. This passage is speaking about church discipline.
 - b. If the church is universal, visible or invisible, this command is impossible.

- c. Many believe there are two churches – the big universal church and the small local church.
2. Acts 5:11 – **And great fear came upon all the church, and upon as many as heard these things.** There are two groups of people spoken of in this verse.
3. Acts 8:1 – **And Saul was consenting unto his death. And at that time there was a great persecution against the church which was at Jerusalem; and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judaea and Samaria, except the apostles.** The persecution was against the church at Jerusalem, which was scattered. Other religions were not persecuted.
4. I Corinthians 4:17 – **For this cause have I sent unto you Timotheus, who is my beloved son, and faithful in the Lord, who shall bring you into remembrance of my ways which be in Christ, as I teach every where in every church.** Each assembly received the same instructions from Paul.
5. I Corinthians 14:23 – **If therefore the whole church be come together into one place, and all speak with tongues, and there come in those that are unlearned, or unbelievers, will they not say that ye are mad?**
6. III John 9 – **I wrote unto the church: but Diotrephes, who loveth to have the preeminence among them, receiveth us not.**
7. I Timothy 3:5 – **(For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?)**
- K. There is no such thing as a universal invisible church nor is there a universal visible church on earth.

II. ASSOCIATED BY COVENANT IN THE FAITH AND FELLOWSHIP OF THE GOSPEL.

- A. Acts 2:41-42 – **Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls. 42 And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.**
 1. Verse 41 - Only those who gladly received Peter's message about Jesus were baptized and added to the 120 members already in existence.
 2. In order for the three thousand souls to be added to the church, the church had to already be in existence.
 3. Verse 42 - Those who were joined to them continued with them in all things they already had.
- B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 1. II Corinthians 8:5 – **And this they did, not as we hoped, but first gave their own selves to the Lord, and unto us by the will of God.**
 - a. It is plain to see these believers were saved and scripturally baptized, as they are members of the various churches of Macedonia.
 - b. They are obeying the will of God in giving themselves to the Lord, and to Paul.
 - c. It is also apparent they have already given themselves to one another, as they are all members of the Lord's local church in their area.

2. Acts 2:47 – **Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.** Reading from verse 41 of this chapter, it is plain to see these new believers are in fellowship with one another because of Jesus Christ.
3. I Corinthians 5:12-13 – **For what have I to do to judge them also that are without? do not ye judge them that are within? 13 But them that are without God judgeth. Therefore put away from among yourselves that wicked person.**
 - a. This passage is speaking about church discipline.
 - b. God judges those outside the church, while the church judges those inside its membership.
 - c. The most severe punishment any church can give is to exclude a believer from its fellowship, which is also removing the umbrella of God’s protection from them.

III. OBSERVING THE ORDINANCES OF BAPTISM AND THE LORD’S SUPPER AS GIVEN BY CHRIST.

- A. More will be said about scriptural baptism and the Lord’s Supper in the next article.
- B. The next step in obedience; after salvation, is scriptural baptism.
 1. Matthew 3:1-12 – John the Baptist always baptized believers, but refused to baptize those that did not have fruits meet for repentance.
 2. John 4:1-2 – Jesus taught his early church to baptize those who believed the gospel message.
 3. Acts 2:38-47 – On the Day of Pentecost and afterward, the Jerusalem church baptized believers.
 4. Acts 5:13 – The Bible records that some believers were not baptized, thus did not become members of the Lord’s church because they were afraid.
 5. Acts 8:12 – Philip baptized these people into the membership of the church at Samaria.
 6. Acts 16:25-34 – The Philippian jailer was baptized into the membership of the church at Philippi.
- C. After salvation and scriptural baptism, those wishing to remember what Christ has done for them observe the Lord’s Supper.
 1. Acts 2:41 – When these people were saved, and scripturally baptized, they were eligible to receive the Lord’s Supper at the hand of the early Jerusalem church, of which they were members.
 2. Acts 20:7 – This church observed the Lord’s Supper each Sunday.
 3. A person who is not a member of a local Baptist church cannot take the Lord’s Supper with that particular body.
- D. I Corinthians 11:1-2 – **Be ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ. 2 Now I praise you, brethren, that ye remember me in all things, and keep the ordinances, as I delivered them to you.**
 1. Verse 1 - The churches of Jesus Christ are to observe the ordinances as Paul was instructed to observe them. See also verse 23-26 which states, **For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord**

Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread: 24 And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me. 25 After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me. 26 For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till he come.

2. Verse 2 - The only ordinances that are recorded, as being observed by any of the churches of the New Testament, are baptism and the Lord's Supper.
 3. Foot washing is never mentioned in the scriptures as being observed by any of the churches or the apostles in the New Testament.
- E. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
1. II Thess. 3:5 – **And the Lord direct your hearts into the love of God, and into the patient waiting for Christ.** The ordinances are not mentioned in particular, but any time we obey God, we will observe the ordinances correctly.
 2. Romans 16:17-20 – **Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them. 18 For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple. 19 For your obedience is come abroad unto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalf: but yet I would have you wise unto that which is good, and simple concerning evil. 20 And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.**
 - a. This is a good practice for all true churches.
 - b. If we would stay true to God's doctrines, we must forsake the doctrines of men.
 3. I Corinthians 11:23-34 – **For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread: 24 And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me. 25 After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me. 26 For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till he come. 27 Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. 28 But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup. 29 For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body. 30 For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep. 31 For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged. 32 But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world. 33 Wherefore, my brethren, when ye come together to eat, tarry one for another. 34 And if any man hunger, let him**

eat at home; that ye come not together unto condemnation. And the rest will I set in order when I come.

- a. This scripture speaks of the method of giving the Lord's Supper.
 - b. The supper was given only to churches, never to those outside the assembly.
 - c. There is a responsibility of the church to judge its own members of public sins and discipline any person who is ineligible to take the Lord's Supper.
 - d. There is also a responsibility of each individual to judge himself of any secret sins, unknown to the congregation.
4. **Matthew 18:15-20 – Moreover if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. 16 But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. 17 And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican. 18 Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. 19 Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. 20 For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.**
- a. Church members must understand that if they hold any grudge against any member of their church, they cannot take the Lord's Supper.
 - b. They must first get rid of the grudge; then take the Lord's Supper.
 - c. Matthew 5:23,24 makes it abundantly clear that if we hold something against a brother, God will not accept our worship, whether this worship is in a regular worship service, daily prayers, or the Lord's Supper.
5. **II Corinthians 2:17 – For we are not as many, which corrupt the word of God: but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God speak we in Christ.** Many corrupt the Word of God and God's churches by giving the Lord's Supper to whomsoever they please.
6. **I Corinthians 4:17 – For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory;** There are trials in this world if we serve God only, but the eternal benefits are well worth it all.

IV. GOVERNED BY HIS LAWS.

A. **Matthew 28:20 – Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.**

1. Jesus said to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you (the New Testament church).
2. No one has the right to change his law concerning the church and its ordinances.

B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:

1. John 14:15 – **If ye love me, keep my commandments.**
 2. John 15:12 – **This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you.**
 3. I John 4:21 – **And this commandment have we from him, That he who loveth God love his brother also.**
 4. I Thessalonians 4:2 – **For ye know what commandments we gave you by the Lord Jesus.**
 5. II John 6 – **And this is love, that we walk after his commandments. This is the commandment, That, as ye have heard from the beginning, ye should walk in it.**
 6. Galatians 6:2 – **Bear ye one another’s burdens, and so fulfil the law of Christ.**
 7. All the epistles.
- V. AND EXERCISING THE GIFTS, RIGHTS, AND PRIVILEGES INVESTED IN THEM BY HIS WORD.
- A. Ephesians 4:7 – **But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ.**
 1. Paul writing to the local church at Ephesus instructs them that grace to serve in a particular or certain service in the church is given to each member, according to the measure of the gift of Christ.
 2. Every member is saved for a purpose by God’s grace.
 - B. I Corinthians 14:12 – **Even so ye, forasmuch as ye are zealous of spiritual gifts, seek that ye may excel to the edifying of the church.**
 1. Paul tells us we ought to desire spiritual gifts in order to be a blessing to the church in building it up spiritually.
 2. Spiritual gifts are not to be desired in order to prove you are saved.
- VI. AND THAT ITS ONLY SCRIPTURAL OFFICERS ARE BISHOPS OR PASTORS AND DEACONS.
- A. Philippians 1:1 – **Paul and Timotheus, the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons:**
 1. Paul addresses the only officers spoken of as being in New Testament churches.
 2. There is no such thing or person mentioned in the New Testament kind of churches as the pope of Roman Catholicism!
 - B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 1. Acts 14:23 – **And when they had ordained them elders in every church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord, on whom they believed.**
 2. Acts 15:22 – **Then pleased it the apostles and elders, with the whole church, to send chosen men of their own company to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas; namely, Judas surnamed Barsabas, and Silas, chief men among the brethren:**

BAPTISM AND THE LORD'S SUPPER

WE BELIEVE THAT CHRISTIAN BAPTISM IS THE IMMERSION IN WATER OF A BELIEVER INTO THE NAME OF THE FATHER, AND OF THE SON, AND OF THE HOLY GHOST, TO SHOW FORTH IN A SOLEMN AND BEAUTIFUL EMBLEM, OUR FAITH IN THE CRUCIFIED, BURIED, AND RISEN SAVIOR, WITH ITS EFFECT, IN OUR DEATH TO SIN AND RESURRECTION TO A NEW LIFE; THAT IT IS A PREREQUISITE TO THE PRIVILEGES OF A CHURCH RELATION; AND TO THE LORD'S SUPPER, IN WHICH THE MEMBERS OF THE CHURCH BY THE USE OF BREAD AND WINE, ARE TO COMMEMORATE TOGETHER THE DYING LOVE OF CHRIST PRECEDED ALWAYS BY SOLEMN SELF EXAMINATION.

This statement of faith includes both baptism and the Lord's Supper because these are the only two ordinances observed by Independence Baptist Church. Both of these ordinances are explicitly linked to the doctrine of the local church, and cannot be separated, observed or practiced apart from the authority of each local church.

BAPTISM

- I. WE BELIEVE THAT CHRISTIAN BAPTISM IS THE IMMERSION IN WATER OF A BELIEVER.
- A. Bible baptism is always **in** water and not sprinkling, pouring, or anything else that does not completely cover or immerse the person being baptized.
 - B. Dictionaries may give the definition of baptism as sprinkling, pouring, etc., but we must remember that the dictionary gives the definition of words only as they are being used at the time of printing. It would be well to remember the words of C. D. Cole concerning the definitions of Bible words.

In getting at the true meaning of Bible words, we must remember that human dictionaries do not determine, but merely register the meaning of words according to their current usage. This explains why Webster and others define baptism as the act of dipping-pouring, or sprinkling. These men did not profess to be theologians, and their definitions merely reflect the opinions of recognized theologians whose opinions differ. It was observed that some denominations dip or immerse and call their act baptism, while others poured or sprinkled and called their act baptism, and so baptism is defined as being any one of these acts. Bible doctrines cannot be settled by the human dictionaries. We must get our definitions of Bible words from the Bible itself.
 - C. Acts 8:36-39.
 - 1. Philip tells the Eunuch that a person **must** be a believer or saved before they can be scripturally baptized. **If thou believest with all thy heart thou mayest.**
 - 2. Philip and the Eunuch both went down into the water and the Eunuch was immersed or buried **in** (not by) the water.
 - D. Sprinkling and pouring as an act of baptism was not used or known of until later.
 - 1. Sprinkling or pouring water on a person cannot be Bible baptism.
 - 2. God recognizes only that which meets the Bible way of baptism.

- E. One example will have to do for now, but further study will reveal the same truth. Mark 1:4-5.
1. John did baptize **in** the **wilderness**.
 - a. John did not pour or sprinkle people **with water in** the wilderness but he was baptizing them **in** the Jordan River at a place located in the wilderness.
 - b. Verse 5 states they were baptized (immersed) **in** the River of Jordan and not by or with the river water. There was a complete immersion **in** the water.
- F. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
1. Matthew 3:5-6 – This passage explains that John the Baptist baptized **in** the river Jordan, but **with** the River Jordan.
 2. John 3:22-23 – John used much water to baptize, because he **immersed** believers.
 3. John 4:1-2 – Jesus taught his disciples to baptize as John baptized.
 - a. With much water, immersion
 - b. Believers only
 - c. For the correct purpose
 - d. With proper authority.
 4. Matthew 28:19 – Christ gave his church his great commission, explaining they should continue to immerse.
 5. Mark 16:16 – The true believer is baptized by immersion, because that is what baptism is.
 6. Acts 2:38 – On the Day of Pentecost, Peter explained that believers should be baptized (immersed), become a member of that local church, so they can receive the Holy Ghost.
 7. Acts 8:12 – When the believers at Samaria believed the word preached by Philip, they were baptized (immersed).
 8. Acts 16:32-34 – The Philippian jailer and his household was baptized (immersed) after they were saved.
 9. Acts 18:8 – Crispus and the other believers at Corinth were baptized (immersed) after they believed.

II. INTO THE NAME OF THE FATHER, AND OF THE SON, AND OF THE HOLY GHOST.

- A. Matthew 28:19 - Baptist do it this way because Jesus said to do it this way.
1. There are those today who say that we are to baptize in the name of Jesus only, but it is better to do it God's way than modern man's.
 2. People who debate the words to say when they baptize do not understand what the phrase **...in the name of...** means.
 3. Those words mean authority.
 4. There is no authority in using the words, I baptize in the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Ghost.
 5. When God is present, there is no debate about words.
- B. What is said when people are baptized.

1. The Bible does not record that anybody ever baptized a believer and used the words **...baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost...**
2. The Bible states that people were baptized in the name of Jesus, which is referring to the authority given to men by God Almighty.
 - a. Acts 2:38 - **Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.**
 - b. Acts 8:16 - **(For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.)**
 - c. Acts 10:48 - **And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain days.**
 - d. Acts 19:5 - **When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.**
 - e. Acts 22:16 - **And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord.**
3. The speech said at the time of baptizing is not necessarily important.
 - a. It is more important that God be there.
 - b. It is good to always say we are baptizing in the authority of God, so people will understand we are not baptizing in our own authority.
 - c. I always say I am baptizing in the name (authority) of the Father, the Son and the Holy Ghost, so there will be no misunderstanding.
- C. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 1. Gal. 3:27-28 - **For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. 28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.**
 2. This passage is speaking about the authority of Christ, which is the authority of God Almighty.

III. TO SHOW FORTH IN A SOLEMN AND BEAUTIFUL EMBLEM, OUR FAITH IN THE CRUCIFIED, BURIED, AND RISEN SAVIOR, WITH ITS EFFECT, IN OUR DEATH TO SIN AND RESURRECTION TO A NEW LIFE.

- A. Our baptism after being saved is a picture of what we believe Jesus has done for us in his death, burial, and resurrection.
- B. Romans 6:4-6 states, **Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. 5 For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: 6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.**
 1. Paul tells us that our baptism pictures our death to sin and Christ's death for our sins.
 2. Our burial in water pictures Jesus' burial in the tomb for our sins.
 3. Our being raised from the watery grave pictures the resurrection of Jesus from the grave for our sins.

4. When we are raised up out of the waters of baptism we profess to those who observe that we have died to sin and now are raised up with Jesus to walk in the way of new life of righteousness.
- C. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 1. Colossians 2:12 – **Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.**
 2. I Peter 3:20-21 – **Which sometime were disobedient, when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water.**
 3. Acts 22:16 – **And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord.**

The following is an outline of Scriptural Baptism as held by Independence Baptist Church

Scriptural Baptism

Matthew 3:13,16,17 ... I Corinthians 11:2 - ...**Keep the ordinances, as I delivered them unto you.**

Is scriptural baptism important? Yes. The Holy Trinity was present.

- Christ walked some 60 miles to be baptized.
- The Holy Spirit attended the service.
- God the Father voiced his approval of the service.

What is necessary for scriptural baptism?

I. Scriptural Subject.

A. The person must already be saved.

B. Scriptures.

1. Matthew 28:19 - Making disciples comes before baptism.
2. Acts 2:41 - They received the word, and then were baptized.
3. Acts 8:12,36,37 - They believed the word, and then were baptized.
4. Acts 10:43,44,47 - They believed, received the Holy Ghost, and then were baptized.
5. Acts 16 - the Philippian jailer asked, What must I do to be saved? The answer, ...**Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved...**
6. Hebrews 10:4 - If the blood of bulls and goats can't take away sin, how can water take sins away?

II. Scriptural Method.

A. Immersion in water only.

1. Matthew 3:16,17 - Jesus was immersed.
2. John 3:23 - John needed much water.
3. Acts 8:37-39 – The Eunuch and Philip went down into the water for proper baptism.
4. Romans 6 - Baptism pictures a burial, and this takes immersion.

B. Baptize is an English transliteration from the Greek word “baptize” which means to dip as in dying cloth.

III. Scriptural Administrator.

- A. It takes authority to do a lot of things.
 - 1. Make money. (Only the government can legally do this.)
 - 2. Practice medicine.
 - 3. Take money out of my checking account.
- B. The trail of authority for baptism.
 - 1. John 1:6 - **There was a man sent from God, whose name was John.** John the Baptist got his authority from God.
 - 2. Acts 1:21,22 - John baptized Jesus and all of his disciples (apostles).
 - 3. John 4:1,2 - Jesus didn't baptize anybody, but taught his disciples to baptize. (his disciples were the first church.)
 - 4. Acts 2:41 - Day of Pentecost - 3,000 saved and added to the church by baptism.
 - 5. Acts 10:47 - Before Peter baptized the household of Cornelius, permission was granted from those present.

IV. Scriptural Purpose.

- A. Scriptural Baptism **pleases** the Lord.
 - 1. Matthew 3:17 - When Christ was baptized, God said, **This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.**
 - 2. III John 4 - **I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in truth.** It is important to be a soul winner, but the greatest joy is not in soul winning but in seeing the saved walk after Christ.
 - 3. Matthew 28:18-20 - When the great commission is fulfilled, God is pleased. (Obedience)
- B. Scriptural baptism **proclaims** the gospel.
 - 1. I Peter 3:21 - **The like figure whereunto even baptism doth also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ**
 - 2. Colossians 2:12 - **Buried with him in baptism.** Pictures and proclaims the gospel.
 - 3. Romans 6:4 - **Pictures and proclaims** we are dead to our old life of sin.
 - 4. Matthew 28:19 - **Pictures and proclaims** our faith in the Holy Trinity.
 - 5. Gal. 3:26,27 - **Pictures and proclaims** our putting on Christ.
- C. Scriptural baptism **protects** the church.
 - 1. From Protestant Denominationalism.
 - a. We will not accept infant baptism, because it is no baptism at all
 - b. Being careful who the church accepts baptism from will protect the church from becoming like all other "churches".
 - 2. From interdenominationalism.
 - a. We will not accept baptism from interdenominational churches, because it is not baptism at all.
 - b. Some churches accept infant baptism, pouring and immersion by accepting baptism from churches that do not know what true baptism is.
 - 3. From the ecumenical one world church.

- a. Because we won't accept their baptism, we won't accept them being a true church of the Lord Jesus Christ.
- b. This action will keep true churches from joining Satan's one world church.

The Lord's Supper

IV. THAT IT IS A PREREQUISITE TO THE PRIVILEGES OF A CHURCH RELATION; AND TO THE LORD'S SUPPER, IN WHICH THE MEMBERS OF THE CHURCH BY THE USE OF BREAD AND WINE, ARE TO COMMEMORATE TOGETHER THE DYING LOVE OF CHRIST PRECEDED ALWAYS BY SOLEMN SELF EXAMINATION.

- A. Baptism is the door into the church membership.
 1. No one has the right to observe the Lord's Supper without first being saved and then baptized into a New Testament Baptist Church.
 2. The church is always a local organization; therefore the Lord's Supper is always closed to the members of that particular church.
- B. Acts 2:41-42 – **Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls. 42 And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.**
 1. They gladly received the gospel that the church preached.
 2. They received baptism (immersion in water) after they believed.
 3. They were added to the church through Baptist baptism.
 4. They continued steadfastly in the Apostles doctrine (teaching) and fellowship.
 5. They observed the Lord's Supper only after baptism and joining that local church.
- C. This is the way it is taught in Matthew 28:19-20, in the book of Acts, as well as the Epistles to the churches.
- D. In I Corinthians 11:26, Paul wrote to the church at Corinth about how they were to observe the Lord's Supper.
 1. The Lord's Supper shows by symbol the death of Jesus for our sins.
 2. The Lord's Supper is to be observed by local New Testament Baptist Churches until Jesus comes.
- E. I Corinthians 11:17-34 – In these verses, Paul clears up many misunderstandings the Corinthian church had concerning the Lord's Supper.
 1. There must be the knowledge of our being saved and understanding that we are saved by the death of Christ and not by works in order to observe the Lord's Supper.
 2. There must be an honest looking to Jesus and not our own worthiness.
 3. We must remember him in this memorial service called the Lord's Supper.
 4. Unleavened bread and wine are the only elements that can be used scripturally for the Lord's Supper by a Baptist Church.
- F. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 1. Matthew 26:26-29 – Mark 14:22-25 – Luke 22:14-20 – These are companion scriptures that instruct us how Christ gave the Lord's Supper to the early church.

2. I Corinthians 5:1-8 – Paul instructs the church at Corinth to discipline the member with public sins before they take the Lord's Supper.
 3. I Corinthians 10:3-32 – This passage can be applied to the attitude of church members when they come together to take the Lord's Supper.
 4. John 6:26-71 – This passage instructs God's church to preach everything the Bible says.
 - a. Some, or many, might go away.
 - b. Let them go away, but we do not encourage them to go away.
 - c. If they go away, it is because they do not understand what Christ is saying.
- V. The nature of the Lord's Supper.
- A. It is not a sacrament, which is a visible sign or action instituted by Christ to give grace. There are seven sacraments ordained by Catholics, which cause a person to receive the grace of God for eternal life, as stated by Pope John Paul II in Catholic Position Papers, Series B—Number 24 October, 1982—Japan Edition, Seido Foundation for the Advancement of Education, 12-6 Funado-Cho, Ashiya-Shi Japan. The overall theme for Pope John Paul II's pastoral visit to England and Wales was the seven Sacraments. In Westminster Cathedral, London, he baptized four people; in Southwark Cathedral, south London, he anointed the sick; he administered the Sacrament of Confirmation in Coventry, ordained 12 men in Manchester, gave First Holy Communion to a group of children in Cardiff, and spoke extensively about the Sacraments of Penance and Matrimony in Liverpool and York, respectively. We give below the main points of the Pope's homilies on all these occasions.
 1. Baptism – Catholics state that baptism is the first of many steps that lead to eternal life.
 2. Confirmation – This is when Catholics receive the Holy Spirit of God, as on the Day of Pentecost.
 3. Penance/Confession – When sin is confessed to the church or the priest who acts on behalf of the church, that sin is forgiven.
 4. Holy Communion – This is Eucharist. The false doctrine of transubstantiation (the wine is turned into the actual blood of Christ and the wafer is turned into the actual body of Christ) is taught.
 5. Matrimony – The family is the core of all societies, even of the Kingdom of God.
 6. Holy Orders – Ordaining to the priesthood. Only those unmarried can be ordained, or those married who converted to Catholicism after they were married.
 7. Anointing of the sick, or Extreme Unction – Trusting in Christ for our everyday health. Extreme Unction is administered to the dying.
 - B. It is a symbolic ordinance, as baptism is a symbolic ordinance.
 - C. The elements of the Lord's Supper were present at the Passover meal partaken of by Christ.

The Elements Of The Lord's Supper

- I. Ingredients used in the Lord's Supper are the same as used in the Passover.
- A. Ex. 12:7-11 - The lamb in the Passover represents Christ. Unleavened bread in the Passover represents the sinlessness of Christ and the sincerity of heart in which we should partake of the Lord's Supper. The Bible makes no mention of a beverage used in the Passover.
1. In the New Testament, the lamb was apparently served in a soup like mixture called sop. This is what Jesus gave Judas as a sign of his betrayal. Matthew 26:20-25. John 13:26-30.
 2. We don't use a lamb today because the symbolism of the Old Testament lamb was fulfilled when Christ became the lamb of the New Testament for us.
 - a. The Jews were looking forward to a lamb to come, therefore, the laws concerning animal sacrifices were still in effect.
 - b. Today, we look back to what Christ did for us; therefore, no animal sacrifice is needed.
 3. We don't believe in transubstantiation (the bread actually becoming the body of Christ).
- B. Unleavened bread was used in the Passover and Feast of Unleavened Bread. This is the kind of bread used in the first Passover and in the Passover when Christ instituted the Lord's Supper.
1. Ex. 12:15 - Seven days shall ye eat unleavened bread.
 2. Ex. 23:18 - Thou shall not offer the blood of my sacrifice with leavened bread.
 3. Ex. 34:18 - The feast of unleavened bread shall thou keep.
 4. Deut. 16:1-4 - No leavened bread at Passover and Feast of Unleavened Bread.
 5. I Corinthians 11:24 - Unleavened bread represents the body of Christ which had no sin in it.
- II. Leaven is **always** a type of sin.
- A. Scriptures showing leaven is always a type of sin.
1. Matthew 13:33 - The woman hiding leaven in three measures of meal.
 - a. The leaven is not the gospel that is hid in the three measures of meal.
 - b. The woman compares to the harlot of Rev. 17:1.
 - c. II Corinthians 4:3, the gospel is not hid except it is hid to those that are lost.
 - d. The kingdom of God will not completely fill the earth **in purity**, even though modernists may teach so.
 - e. This parable is an explanation of the way Satan's false gospel will fill the earth and seem to take over the Kingdom of God. This is very obvious in today's world.
 - f. The devil hides his leaven (sin). God proclaims his gospel to the entire world.
 2. Luke 12:1,2 - Leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. (It's hidden.)
 3. I Corinthians 5:6-8 - A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump. Speaking about how a little sin not taken care of grows because someone else decides

they can also sin, and then somebody else decides they also can sin and then somebody else...

4. Gal. 5:9 - A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.
 5. Crackers or light bread should not be used to take the Lord's Supper because they contain leaven, which is a type of sin.
- B. Unleavened bread emphasizes the need of purging the church.
1. There is a need for each individual church member to examine their own lives for sin they have hidden from themselves.
 - a. This sin must be recognized, asked forgiveness of, and forsaken.
 - b. If the individual takes the Supper without cleansing himself of these sins, God will judge that church member.
 - c. God could make them sick, or take their life.
 2. There is also necessity of the church to examine the individual church members for evidence of public sins.
 - a. If these sins are found, the church ought to discipline those members before the Lord's Supper is taken.
 - b. If the church takes the Supper without cleansing itself of public sins, God will judge the individual church members, making some of them sick, and taking the lives of others.
- III. Unleavened **Wheat** bread - not potato bread, or pumpkin bread.
- A. Wheat mentioned as a grain.
1. Luke 16:7 - Owing a hundred measures of wheat.
 2. Luke 22:31 - Satan desired to sift Peter as wheat.
 3. Acts 27:38 - Cast the wheat into the sea.
 4. I Corinthians 15:37 - Sowest not body, chance of wheat or other grain.
 5. Rev. 6:6 - Measure of wheat for a penny.
 6. Rev. 18:13 - oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts.
- B. Wheat mentioned as representing saved people.
1. Matthew 3:12 - Gather his wheat in the garner. John declares the wheat to represent saved people and the chaff representing lost people.
 2. Matthew 13:24-30 - Parable of wheat and tares. The explanation in Matthew 13:36-43 very plainly declares wheat to represent saved people and tares to represent lost people.
- C. Wheat mentioned as representing Christ.
1. John 12:24 - except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die.
 2. The context certainly shows us that Christ is talking about himself and his soon coming death, burial, and resurrection.
- IV. Conclusion - The proper use of these symbols in taking the Lord's Supper is very important; therefore, we should never forget the Christ the symbols are pointing to.
- A. The Old Testament saints had annual symbols to teach them to remember what Christ had done for them and to teach their children those things they had never seen.
- B. Numbers 21:4-9 - The brazen serpent that Moses on the pole. The message is: Look and live.

1. II Kings 18:4 - King Hezekiah destroyed the brazen serpent because people worshipped it instead of remembering what it stood for.
2. John 3:14,15 - Jesus Christ put the brazen serpent in the proper perspective.
- C. Unleavened bread never spoils.
 1. Christ's body never spoils.
 2. After you make unleavened bread, put it in a covered dish: sealed, to keep out impurities, dust and airborne particles.
 3. It will not go bad.
 4. We've kept some as long as two years.

Unleavened Fermented Grape Wine

- I. Fruit of the vine - Used three times in the New Testament.
 - A. Matthew 26:29 - Taking fruit of the vine at Lord's Supper. **But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom.**
 - B. Mark 14:25 - Taking fruit of the vine at Lord's Supper. **Verily I say unto you, I will drink no more of the fruit of the vine, until that day that I drink it new in the kingdom of God.**
 - C. Luke 22:18 - Taking fruit of the vine at Lord's Supper. **For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.**
- II. New Testament scriptures are very conclusive at arriving at the use of wine or grape juice in the Supper.
 - A. The meaning of the term fruit of the vine has been slowly changed down through the years.
 1. When the Bible was written there was no doubt that the term fruit of the vine meant wine.
 2. The term never meant grape juice.
 3. But since men are so against alcohol, their minds are blinded to any good use of wine.
 - B. Other words have also had their meaning changed down through the years:
 1. One example is the word church, which in the Bible means assembly, but today, many people believe a church is invisible or visible universal.
 2. We know from Bible study that a church is always an assembly, and always local.
 - C. Anybody that studies the Bible for the truth, not being influenced by modern definitions will clearly see that God's people have used wine for many years, and for many different purposes.
 1. Wine was a symbol of the blood of Christ in the Old Testament, and that symbol remains the same today.
 2. God hasn't changed - men have changed.
 3. And they are trying to change the Word of God.
 - D. The same people who believe the KJV is the Word of God and reject the NIV and other modern translations do not believe what the Bible (KJV) has to say.

1. Instead they make their own private interpretations when they should be letting the Bible (KJV) reveal the mind of God.
 2. There is not too much difference in the person who uses an NIV and the person who makes his own private interpretations of the Bible.
- E. I think (this, then is my personal opinion) there is a reason the New Testament scriptures use the term fruit of the vine instead of using the word wine.
1. God knew there would be a controversy one day concerning fermented wine or grape juice.
 2. Romans 14:21, the controversy would develop because of conscience.
 3. Romans 14:21 is speaking specifically about eating meat offered to an idol and drinking fermented wine which was first offered to an idol, then served at a regular meal. It is not talking about taking the Lord's Supper, for the Supper is not taken with infidels.
 4. God knew that some would be so convinced against drinking fermented wine as a beverage they would go to the extreme of forbidding fermented wine (unleavened) at the Lord's Supper.
 5. Therefore, I believe (and this doesn't mean that God thinks or acts like I do) God accepts their using grape juice because they are either ignorant of the truth, or their conscience is smitten because of the excesses of fermented wine and distilled liquors as a beverage.
 6. I must also state that those that know fermented grape wine is the proper beverage for the liquid element of the Lord's Supper and refuse to submit themselves to the leadership of the Holy Spirit (because of pressure of church, fellowship, family, or whatever) will be judged accordingly.
 - a. In II Chronicles 30:17-19, Hezekiah prayed that the people be accepted when they took the Passover without being cleansed according to the directions of the law.
 - b. They were accepted because their hearts were right.
 - c. Today, people can be accepted because their hearts are right, not necessarily because everything is done perfectly.
 7. It must also be noted that the church covenant (written and supported by almost all Baptist) declares: ...to abstain from the sale and use of intoxicating drinks as a beverage... not to abstain from fermented wine (unleavened) in the Lord's Supper. (See my article on the church covenant, **abstaining from the sale and use of intoxicating drinks as a beverage**) This shows that those Baptists who wrote and accepted the church covenant had no qualms about using fermented wine (unleavened) in the Lord's Supper, but they were opposed to the sale and use of any intoxicating beverage.
- F. Old Testament Scriptures.
1. A very thorough study of the elements of the Passover and Feast of Unleavened Bread is necessary.
 2. This study will show us that Christ used fermented wine (unleavened) in the Passover and the institution of his Supper.
- G. There is a need to distinguish between fermented wine (unleavened) and what some call wine.

1. I have heard some preachers say they believed in wine for the Lord's Supper when they really believed in grape juice.
 2. These preachers are being deceptive in their language.
 3. They are trying to change the definition of wine to mean grape juice, and in some circles are accomplishing this feat.
 4. When the Bible talks about wine, it means fermented wine (unleavened), not grape juice.
- III. The symbolism of the supper demands fermented wine (unleavened).
- A. Christ used fermented wine (unleavened) in the institution of the supper.
 - B. A very quick check of when the Lord instituted the Supper reveals that he and his apostles were partaking of the Passover.
 - C. Wine, the lamb, and unleavened bread was the food served at Passover.
- IV. Wine shows Christ and his pureness - wine is a type of the blood of Christ.
- A. Revelation 17:6 - Woman drunk on blood of martyrs and saints - you don't get drunk on grape juice.
 - B. Jeremiah 51:7 - Babylon, which is a type of the woman to come, makes all nations drink of her wine - the blood of martyrs and saints.
 - C. Isaiah 55:1 - Salvation referred to as wine - This is why the whore got drunk, trying to destroy the pureness of God's people.
 - D. Genesis 14:18 - Melchizedek (a type of Christ) brought forth bread and wine.
 - E. John 2:1-11 - Jesus turning water into wine. Christ apparently approved of drinking at the wedding, but never approved of getting drunk.
 - a. Some say that the wine Jesus made wasn't intoxicating wine.
 - b. But in verse 10, the governor of the feast asked the bridegroom why he had given the guests the best wine when they were well drunk.
 - c. Strong's Concordance gives the definition of the word drunk as to drink to intoxication, get drunk, drink well, and make drunk.
 - d. One dear brother told me the Corinthians weren't getting drunk, they were getting full.
 - e. The exact same Greek word is used in Rev. 17:2 which speaks of the inhabitants of the earth being drunk with the wine of Pagan Babylon's fornication.
 - f. Rev. 18:3 also uses exactly the same Greek word to describe the drunkenness of the Pagan Babylon.
 - F. Matthew 11:19 - Jesus called a winebibber - John didn't drink wine, but apparently Christ did, at least people thought he did.
 1. It wasn't a sin for Christ to drink wine, I personally believe Christ did drink wine, but he never got drunk.
 2. It must be remembered that the enemies of Christ said Christ was a winebibber (drunk).
 3. They told a lie and the Bible recorded that lie.
 4. This passage was not intended to teach anything about wine, but about the incontinence of men; their being unsatisfied with whatever God did.

- V. Grape juice is a symbol of lost people's blood.
 - A. Revelation 14:17-20 - Grapes of earth are reaped - blood comes out.
 - B. Isaiah 63:1-4 - Christ treading winepress alone - blood on garments.
 - C. Revelation 19:11-14 - Christ comes in a vesture dipped in blood. The saint's garments are not stained at all.

Open, Close, or Closed Lord's Supper?

- I. Closed Lord's Supper.
 - A. Open communion - the practice whereby anyone who claims to be saved is allowed to observe communion.
 - 1. People who believe this doctrine usually believe in the universal, **invisible** church theory.
 - 2. They primarily believe that everybody that is saved is a member of the universal, invisible church.
 - a. There is really no need of a local church because the saved are able to worship anywhere.
 - b. Some even go so far as to believe that the local church hinders their Christian development, and they are better off without a local church.
 - 3. This is principally a Protestant doctrine.
 - B. Close communion - the practice whereby anyone who claims to be saved, and a member of the same church denomination is allowed to take the Lord's Supper.
 - 1. In a Baptist church all Baptists would be allowed to take the Supper, but not the members of another denomination.
 - 2. In a Methodist church all Methodists would be allowed to take the Supper, but not the members of another denomination.
 - 3. In a Catholic church all Catholics would be allowed to take the Supper, but not the members of another denomination.
 - C. Closed communion - the practice whereby only those who claim to be saved, scripturally baptized and a member of that particular local church are allowed to take the Lord's Supper.
 - D. It must be noted that close and open communion didn't originate with the Bible or with God's people, but with those people who weren't allowed to take the Lord's Supper with local churches.
 - 1. They didn't understand why they couldn't take the Supper, even though they were told why
 - 2. They simply believed local churches were being excessively exclusive.
 - 3. When they saw the local churches wouldn't allow them to take the Supper, they went their own way and started observing the Supper their way.
 - 4. They had already started their own churches, so this wasn't a big step for them.
- II. Christ instituted closed communion.
 - A. Matthew 26:17-20 - Jesus ate the Passover (gave the Lord's Supper) to disciples (the twelve). He didn't invite his mother, brothers or sisters, or the man who owned the house.

- B. Exodus 12:1-14 - Procedure to taking Passover and application to the Lord's Supper.
1. The Israelites were unworthy to survive the plague of death, just as we are unworthy to survive eternal death in the lake of fire without the blood of Christ.
 2. The belief in the promises of God concerning the blood of Christ. Verse 13 - Putting the blood on the doorpost is not what saved the people from destruction, but **belief** in the promises of God. The blood is a token (symbol) that the people believed.
 3. Verse 12 and 29 - It was no death angel that passed over that night. It was the Lord Himself. This teaches us that we are not accountable to men or angels, only before God Himself. Lost people certainly need to see that they ought to bow the knee and confess before God their sinfulness and trust Jesus Christ to save them.
- C. Exodus 12:43-49 - The Passover was closed, so is the Lord's Supper.
1. The Passover was a most sacred feast. The instructions for observing the Passover were given only to Israel. The instructions for observing the Lord's Supper is given only to the Lord's local churches.
 2. No stranger (one who has not embraced God **and** the Jewish people as his own) is to partake of the Passover feast until they are circumcised. Today this means that even though someone says they believe in God, we are not to allow them to take the Lord's Supper with us until they join themselves to us through baptism.
 - a. Romans 4:11 - Circumcision is a symbol (not salvation) that a person has believed in God as his Saviour and has also joined himself to the people of God.
 - b. Romans 6:1-5, I Peter 3:21 - Baptism is a symbol (not salvation) that a person has believed in God as his Saviour and is willing to join himself to the people of God (the local New Testament Baptist Church).
 3. Eat the Passover in your own house. There were many homes that made up the nation of Israel. Each home was to take the Passover together. Today, there are many separate local New Testament Baptist Churches that make up the eternal body of Christ. (These local churches will be gathered together **only** in eternity.) Yet each local church is a complete body of Christ in itself. Each separate church is to take the Lord's Supper by itself. Each home took care of itself, and each church takes care of herself.
 - a. The blood wasn't put on one great big door, but on many doors. This means local homes in the entirety of Israel - local churches in the entirety of the church in eternity.
 - b. I Corinthians 11:3 - The proper relationship between head and man and woman. This does not mean one great big man or one great big woman, but the language means mankind and womankind.
 4. Verse 47 - All the congregation of Israel shall keep it.
 - a. All - every one of.
 - b. Congregation of Israel - a particular people, just like the church of Jesus Christ is a particular people.

- c. Shall keep it - a command that is to be kept by the grace of God.
- III. The scriptural order observed on Pentecost and thereafter leads to closed communion.
- A. Acts 2:41,42 - The order of service is:
 - 1. Salvation.
 - 2. Baptism.
 - 3. Added to the church.
 - 4. Apostles' doctrine and fellowship.
 - 5. Lord's Supper (breaking of bread).
 - 6. Prayers.
 - B. Any deviation from scripture always leads to false doctrine or false methods.
- IV. The interests of scriptural church discipline demand the practice of closed communion.
- A. Romans 16:17 directs the churches to put a person out of their midst which cause divisions and offenses contrary to the doctrine they were taught.
 - 1. If a church excludes such individuals they have done what God commanded them to do.
 - 2. If a church practices open communion, that same excluded individual could attend church services and partake of the Lord's Supper with them.
 - B. I Corinthians 5:11 declares that a church should not eat the Lord's Supper with any brother that is called a fornicator, covetous, an idolater, a railer, a drunkard, or an extortioner.
 - 1. When a church excludes an individual for any of these offenses, they are doing God's will.
 - 2. If that same church then practices open communion, that excluded individual could come right back into the church services and observe the Lord's Supper with them.
 - 3. This practice makes a complete mockery of church discipline.
- V. The Lord's Supper is an ordinance of the local church, not a Christian ordinance.
- A. There are two church ordinances, baptism and the Lord's Supper.
 - 1. The true New Testament Baptist church does not accept the baptism of every church.
 - 2. The only baptism that is accepted is that administered by the proper church, to the proper person, for the proper motive, by the proper authority.
 - 3. Anybody can duck someone under water, but that doesn't constitute baptism.
 - 4. One local church doesn't baptize a person for another church.
 - 5. Each church baptizes for herself.
 - 6. Letters are issued from scriptural church to scriptural church, confirming the baptism of an individual.
 - B. The Lord's Supper is an ordinance administered by the local church.
 - 1. It is not a Christian ordinance, which is an ordinance administered by anyone who is saved.
 - 2. Each church administers the Lord's Supper to its own members.

3. One church does not administer the Lord's Supper for another church, any more than one church baptizes for another church, any more than the vote of one church binds another church.
- C. Local church members vote only in their own church.
1. Each local church takes care of its own business, without interference from other churches.
 2. It is definitely wrong for visitors who are members of a sister church to vote in our business meetings, or for me to vote in the business meeting of any sister church.
 - a. They don't have any business deciding for us what we ought to do.
 - b. I don't have any business deciding what any other church ought to do.
 - c. The autonomy of the local church demands that each church serve the Lord the way he wants them to serve him.
- D. It is impossible to observe the Lord's Supper by open communion, or close communion.
1. It is impossible for the church to eat unleavened bread and drink fermented wine (unleavened) and call it the Lord's Supper.
 2. God would not call it his Supper, and he is the one that counts.

OF THE CHRISTIAN SABBATH

WE BELIEVE THAT THE FIRST DAY OF THE WEEK IS THE LORD'S DAY, OR CHRISTIAN SABBATH; AND IS TO BE KEPT SACRED TO RELIGIOUS PURPOSES, BY ABSTAINING FROM ALL SECULAR LABOR AND SINFUL RECREATIONS, BY THE DEVOUT OBSERVANCE OF ALL THE MEANS OF GRACE, BOTH PRIVATE AND PUBLIC; AND BY PREPARATION FOR THAT REST THAT REMAINETH FOR THE PEOPLE OF GOD.

- I. WE BELIEVE THAT THE FIRST DAY OF THE WEEK IS THE LORD'S DAY, OR CHRISTIAN SABBATH; AND IS TO BE KEPT SACRED TO RELIGIOUS PURPOSES.
 - A. The Bible teaches that Sunday is the Lord's Day and should be set aside by all of God's people as a day of worship and a time of rest from the toils of taking care of the body throughout the week.
 - B. There is a need for ceasing from everyday strain and stress upon the body in order to devote time to our soul's spiritual needs. There is more to the child of God than just a physical or earthly body of flesh; there is the new man, the man that has been born of God from above. This man must be fed heavenly food, this man must have Spiritual rest and fellowship from above, thus we have the Lord's Day in which we can rest unto God and fellowship with his people as they meet together in the house of God for worship services every Sunday.
 - C. Two days are used when speaking of days that are set aside for religious purposes, The Sabbath Day, and The Lord's Day. Let us define them so we can understand them.

First: The Sabbath Day.

1. The following is a definition from Webster's dictionary...Sabbath - The seventh day of the week observed from Friday evening to Saturday evening as a day of rest and worship by Jews and some Christians, Sunday observed among Christians as a day of rest and worship: a time of rest.
2. Now we notice the definition given by Smith's Bible dictionary. The name given to the seventh day of the week, the day of rest, it is the only ordinance besides marriage which dates from the creation, (Genesis 2:3). The special rites and services of the sanctuary were peculiar to the day (Numbers 18:3-9): (Leviticus 24:3-9) and the laws of Moses were read (Acts 15:21), 'Teaching Jacob God's judgments and Israel his law' (Deuteronomy 33:10).
3. The word Sabbath in the Hebrew language means intermission. It is translated from a root word that means, To repose, desist from exertion, cease interruption, or special holiday.
4. The important thing to remember is that a day which is called a Sabbath Day in the Bible did not always fall on the seventh day as many people think. God had the nation of Israel to set aside different days of the week for special Sabbaths. The primary meaning of the word Sabbath is a day set aside for rest and worship of God for man, an intermission of everyday affairs in order to place emphasis upon the worship of God.

Second: The Lord's Day.

1. First we give Webster's dictionary definition. The Christian belief that Christ arose from the dead on Sunday.
2. Now we give the first portion of Smith's Bible dictionary, which would be of great service to everyone who had a copy. (Revelation 1:10), the first day of the week, the weekly festival in memory of the resurrection of the Lord on that day.
3. The Bible definition is as the Baptist article of faith reads.
 - a. Acts 20:7, On the first day of the week (Sunday) when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul preached to them. This is what Baptists still do on the first day of the week, which is Sunday.
 - b. John 20:19 **Then the same day at evening being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, peace be unto you.**
 - 1) After his resurrection Jesus appeared to his church on the first day of the week (Sunday).
 - 2) We find the church assembled together for preaching and praying on the first day of the week, which is Sunday in the Bible after Christ's resurrection. John 20:26.
- A. We find the Christian Sabbath is the first day of the week, which is Sunday, the day of resurrection.
 1. Most Baptists prefer to make a distinction between the two words for fear of confusion.
 2. When Baptists use the words Christian Sabbath they always have reference to the first day of the week, Sunday, the day of the Lord's resurrection, and meet on this day to worship him.
- B. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 1. Colossians 2:16-17 – **Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holyday, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days: 17 Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ.**
 2. I Corinthians 16:1-2 – **Now concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye. 2 Upon the first day of the week let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.**
 3. Mark 2:27,28 – **And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath: 28 Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.**
 4. Genesis 2:3 – **And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made.**
 5. Exodus 20:8-11 – **Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy. 9 Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work: 10 But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: 11 For in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested**

the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it.

6. Psalms 118:24 – **This is the day which the LORD hath made; we will rejoice and be glad in it.**

II. BY ABSTAINING FROM ALL SECULAR LABOR AND SINFUL RECREATIONS, BY THE DEVOUT OBSERVANCE OF ALL THE MEANS OF GRACE, BOTH PRIVATE AND PUBLIC; AND BY PREPARATION FOR THAT REST THAT REMAINETH FOR THE PEOPLE OF GOD.

A. Proper Sunday worship.

1. Not a family day.

Many churches dismiss Sunday evening services because they say Sunday is when the family is supposed to be together.

- a. I think they are dismissing services because they cannot get most of their church families to attend Sunday evening services.
- b. Families are staying home anyway, (or doing other things not in the home) so many churches are agreeing with them.

2. I do not like a list of do's and don'ts for Sunday. (Or any other day, for that matter.)

- a. Sunday is supposed to be a day of rest from the cares of this world, not a day of recreation, or preparation for Monday.
- b. What we do on Sunday is a reflection of what we are looking forward to doing in eternity.
- c. In eternity, we will be worshipping God, not playing, or working.

B. God said he would bless Israel if they kept the Sabbath worship.

1. Isaiah 58:13-14.

- a. God told Israel that if they would observe the Sabbath day and delight in it as a day of worship and honoring him that he would bless them.
- b. The same thing is true for those who observe the Lord's Day. God will bless those who leave off worrying, fretting, and toiling on Sunday and go to his kind of Church and worship him.
- c. There was a time when the farmer would lay down the plow and go to church.
- d. There was a time when even lost people would not work on Sunday in honor of the Lord.

2. Isaiah 56:1-8 – People are to spend Sunday in worship and meditation upon God.

- a. Verse 2 – blessed is the man who does no evil on the Sabbath.
- b. Verse 4-5 – the eunuchs shall have a better blessing than children if they keep the Sabbath.
- c. Verse 6-7 – Every stranger (that person not of the household of Israel) will be brought into the mountain of God if they will only keep the Sabbath holy unto the Lord.

C. Hebrews 10:24-25. **Not forsaking the assembly of yourselves together, as the manner of some is.**

1. Sunday is the time to meet with other Baptists in worship and Bible study.

2. Every saved person should seek to be a member of a New Testament Baptist Church where they can attend the services and be taught.
 - a. Acts 11:26 – **And when he had found him, he brought him unto Antioch. And it came to pass, that a whole year they assembled themselves with the church, and taught much people. And the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch.**
 - b. Acts 13:44 – **And the next sabbath day came almost the whole city together to hear the word of God.**
 - c. Psalms 118:15 – **The voice of rejoicing and salvation is in the tabernacles of the righteous: the right hand of the LORD doeth valiantly.**
 - d. Leviticus 19:30 – **Ye shall keep my sabbaths, and reverence my sanctuary: I am the LORD.**
 - e. Luke 4:16 – **And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up for to read.**
3. Families ought to be together on the Lord's Day in church services and at home to worship and honor him.
4. The Lord's Day is a time of intermission in our busy week when we turn our full attention toward him.
- D. The Jews always met on the seventh day of the week to read the scriptures and be taught. That is why Paul and the others would meet on this day with the Jews in order to teach them about the Lord Jesus Christ.
- E. Paul and the others preached every day, but on the first day of the week the church would meet together especially for worshipping God.
- F. We should rest from our everyday stress by coming to the house of God.
- G. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 1. Acts 17:2-3 – **And Paul, as his manner was, went in unto them, and three sabbath days reasoned with them out of the scriptures, 3 Opening and alleging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead; and that this Jesus, whom I preach unto you, is Christ.**
 2. Psalms 26:8 – **Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead?**
 3. Psalms 87:3 – **Glorious things are spoken of thee, O city of God. Selah.**
 4. Hebrews 4:3-11 – **For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world. 4 For he spake in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh day from all his works. 5 And in this place again, If they shall enter into my rest. 6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached entered not in because of unbelief: 7 Again, he limiteth a certain day, saying in David, To day, after so long a time; as it is said, To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts. 8 For if Jesus had given them rest, then would he not afterward have spoken of another day. 9 There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God. 10 For he that is entered into his rest, he also**

hath ceased from his own works, as God did from his. 11 Let us labour therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of unbelief.

OF CIVIL GOVERNMENT

WE BELIEVE THAT CIVIL GOVERNMENT IS OF DIVINE APPOINTMENT, FOR THE INTERESTS AND GOOD ORDER OF HUMAN SOCIETY; AND THAT MAGISTRATES ARE TO BE PRAYED FOR, CONSISTENTLY HONORED, AND OBEYED; EXCEPT ONLY IN THINGS OPPOSED TO THE WILL OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST, WHO IS THE ONLY LORD OF THE CONSCIENCE, AND THE PRINCE OF THE KINGS OF THE EARTH.

I. WE BELIEVE THAT CIVIL GOVERNMENT IS OF DIVINE APPOINTMENT, FOR THE INTERESTS AND GOOD ORDER OF HUMAN SOCIETY.

A. Romans 13:1 **Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God; the powers that be are ordained of God.**

1. Baptists have always believed in being law abiding. Their Master, the Lord Jesus Christ believed in abiding by the law of the land.
2. The word power in this verse refers to authority to rule and carry out the rule of command.
3. Since man in himself is a natural lawbreaker he needs someone to rule over him and to keep him in check. This comes from being depraved in nature.
4. God has given certain men down through the ages a divine appointment to rule over nations, families, tribes, cities, towns, villages, etc. In trouble with this world and its lawmakers is that we just do not look to God for grace and wisdom to live as God would have us to.
5. It must be noted that God always worked through the earthly leaders he established.
 - a. Jesus never rebelled against the government of Rome.
 - b. He established that government, and to rebel against that government was the same as rebelling against himself.
 - c. God established Pharaoh as head of Egypt, and sent Moses to Pharaoh, commanding him to let Israel go from Egypt.
 - d. God did not want Israel to rebel against Pharaoh, or Egypt.
 - e. God does not want us to rebel against any governmental authority he has established over us – and God has established every governmental authority over us.
 - f. There is no governmental authority except as established by God – whether we like that authority or not – whether the government abuses their authority or not.

B. Romans 13:2-7.

1. Paul says that those in authority are not given to man to terrorize him, but to protect him.
2. Paul also tells us that God counts all who resist those in authority as resisting him. For it is God who set them in the office of authority.

C. In giving the law to Israel, God in Deuteronomy 16:18 said, **Judges and officers shalt thou make thee in all thy gates, which the LORD thy God giveth thee, throughout thy tribes: and they shall judge the people with just judgment.**

D. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:

1. II Samuel 23:3 – **The God of Israel said, the Rock of Israel spake to me, He that ruleth over men must be just, ruling in the fear of God.**
 2. Exodus 18:23 – **If thou shalt do this thing, and God command thee so, then thou shalt be able to endure, and all this people shall also go to their place in peace.**
 3. Jeremiah 30:21 – When God restores Israel, the governor shall be able to approach to God, as no man has ever been able.
- II. AND THAT MAGISTRATES ARE TO BE PRAYED FOR, CONSISTENTLY HONORED, AND OBEYED.
- A. Matthew 22:21 - Our blessed Savior Himself said, **Render** (give back unto) **therefore unto Caesar the things which are Caesar's and unto God the things which are God's**
 1. We obey all the laws of the land, whether we agree with them or not, as long as those laws do not restrict our worship.
 2. All the planning and zoning laws (and all the procedures required by government officials) are to obeyed.
 3. Do not do something that you know is against governmental laws, or procedures.
 - B. I Timothy 2:1-8.
 1. God's people are instructed to pray for all those in authority.
 2. We are to pray for them not only for their good, but that we might lead a quiet and peaceable life in all Godliness and honesty.
 - C. God requires that we honor the office of the one who is in authority. We may not like the man's personality but we are to honor him for the offices sake.
- III. EXCEPT ONLY IN THINGS OPPOSED TO THE WILL OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST, WHO IS THE ONLY LORD OF THE CONSCIENCE, AND THE PRINCE OF THE KINGS OF THE EARTH.
- A. God's people are expected to obey all authority upon this earth as long as it is not against the teachings of God's word.
 - B. Baptists have always been a people who spoke out when man's law was contrary to God's law.
 1. Acts 4:18-20 – Peter and John were commanded to stop preaching in the name of Christ, but they replied they would obey God, not man.
 2. Abortion and homosexuality are both sins against God, and Baptists should continually speak against such wickedness.
 - C. Acts 5:9 **We ought to obey God rather than man.**
 1. When it comes to the question of whether we should follow man and sin against God, we should always refuse men.
 2. America has one of the greatest governments in the world because those who are called Baptists today fought and died for the liberty and freedom of men.
 3. It would be good for every saved person to read Cathcart's, Baptist Patriots and The American Revolution.
 - D. All men who are in authority today are under the authority of Jesus Christ.

1. They may not believe this or act like it, but the time will come when they shall stand before God and give account of their actions while in the office of authority.
2. Revelation 19:16 – **And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.**
3. Romans 14:9-13 – These verses speak of Christ, our final judge; who we will all give account to.
 - a. Because Christ is our final judge, Christians should not judge one another.
 - b. This does not mean we cannot know if a fellow Christian is doing right or wrong; it means we do not condemn them.
 - c. We can condemn wrong actions, but we are not to condemn people.
- E. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 1. Titus 3:1 – **Put them in mind to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to every good work,**
 2. I Peter 2:13-16 – Christians are to submit themselves to every governmental authority because this is the will of God, and that foolish and unlearned men may be put to silence.
 3. Daniel 3:15-18 – Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego told Nebuchadnezzar they would disobey his command to worship the golden image he had set up, even if they died.
 4. Daniel 6:7-10 – Daniel continued to pray three times a day even when he knew King Darius had signed the decree sentencing any person to the lion's den if they asked anything of any God or man except him.
 5. Matthew 23:10 – None of us should want to be called master or be over other Christians. The real master is servant of all.
 6. Romans 14:4 – We have no right to judge another man's servants. Therefore we have no right to judge (condemn) another Christian because we are all the servants of God.
 7. Psalm 72:11 – **Yea, all kings shall fall down before him: all nations shall serve him.**
 8. Psalm 2:4 – God shall laugh as the calamity of men and nations, because his plan (will) shall be accomplished.

OF THE RIGHTEOUS AND THE WICKED

WE BELIEVE THAT THERE IS A RADICAL AND ESSENTIAL DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE RIGHTEOUS AND THE WICKED; THAT SUCH ONLY AS THROUGH FAITH ARE JUSTIFIED IN THE NAME OF THE LORD JESUS, AND SANCTIFIED BY THE SPIRIT OF OUR GOD, ARE TRULY RIGHTEOUS IN HIS ESTEEM WHILE ALL SUCH AS CONTINUE IN IMPENITENCE AND UNBELIEF ARE IN HIS SIGHT WICKED, AND UNDER THE CURSE; AND THIS DISTINCTION HOLDS AMONG MEN BOTH IN AND AFTER DEATH.

It is good to ask this question – Why is this article included in our statement of faith? We already have articles on Total Depravity, Grace in Regeneration, God’s Purpose In Grace, Sanctification and the Perseverance of the Saints. Doesn’t this article simply repeat what has already been stated?

There is some repetition, to be sure. But this article states the Biblical position of the difference in the righteous and the wicked, which the world (and many religious organizations) are trying to eradicate.

This article also emphasizes the fact that with God, there is no middle ground. With men, we see much middle ground or gray area. With God it is all black or white, right or wrong, for him or against him. Joshua made this very clear in Joshua 24:14,15 when he demanded that Israel make a choice to either serve God or not serve God. **Now therefore fear the LORD, and serve him in sincerity and in truth: and put away the gods which your fathers served on the other side of the flood, and in Egypt; and serve ye the LORD. 15 And if it seem evil unto you to serve the LORD, choose you this day whom ye will serve; whether the gods which your fathers served that were on the other side of the flood, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land ye dwell: but as for me and my house, we will serve the LORD.**

Jehu gathered the worshippers of Baal together by declaring his total complete allegiance to this false god. II Kings 10:18 states, **And Jehu gathered all the people together, and said unto them, Ahab served Baal a little; but Jehu shall serve him much.** Of course, Jehu did not intend to worship Baal, but he did intend to kill those that did. Jehu brought the worshippers into the temple of Baal by declaring his total dedication to this false god. The worshippers of Baal were killed. But Jehu was not totally sold out to God, as he did no better than the worshippers of Baal, and did not completely dedicate himself to God. The result of his half-heartedness toward God is seen in his family and his failure to believe and live by the promises of God.

Therefore we understand the purpose of the article is to declare there is no middle ground in the service of God. It is very clear – the worshippers of God will worship him and live like they worship him. The worshippers of this world will worship this world and live like they worship this world.

I. WE BELIEVE THAT THERE IS A RADICAL AND ESSENTIAL DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE RIGHTEOUS AND THE WICKED.

- A. Just as there is a vast difference between God and man, so it is between that which is right and that which is wrong.
 - 1. There is a vast difference between Satan and God, none will deny.

2. There also will be a vast difference between the righteous and the wicked, as none should deny.
- B. Righteousness and wickedness are exact opposites. They should never mix.
 1. Isaiah 5:20 – **Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!**
 2. The wicked call evil good and call good evil: because they are wicked, while the righteous call evil evil because they are faithful to God.
 3. The mixture of righteousness and wickedness is a terrible abomination to God.
 4. In Nehemiah 13:23-27, Nehemiah was so disgusted with the Israelites who inter-married with Ashdod, Ammon, and Moab (the children were speaking half the language of Israel and half the language of these other nations) that he cursed them, smote some of them, and plucked out their hair!
 5. Revelation 3:14-22 – The church at Laodicea was lukewarm, a thing God hates.
 6. James 3:1-11 – Verse 10-11 – **Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing. My brethren, these things ought not so to be. 11 Doth a fountain send forth at the same place sweet water and bitter?**
- C. A reprobate is one who has been rejected because of his own worthlessness.
 1. 1 Corinthians 9:27 – **But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway.**
 - a. Paul does not mean that he could become lost.
 - b. He means that his works show whether he is a true believer or not.
 - c. There is also a castaway concerning fruitfulness to others.
 2. II Corinthians 13:5-7 – **Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your own selves. Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates? 6 But I trust that ye shall know that we are not reprobates. 7 Now I pray to God that ye do no evil; not that we should appear approved, but that ye should do that which is honest, though we be as reprobates.**
 3. Reprobates are those who are worthless to God and their works prove their reprobation.
 4. Romans 6:16 – **Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?**
 - a. All these passages have to do with works, which we can see.
 - b. We cannot see the heart, as Jesus could with Judas Iscariot.
- D. God's Word tells us there is a difference and that God makes a distinction between that which is right and that which is wrong.
 1. Israel came to the terrible place of not being able to tell what was right or what was wrong.
 2. Malachi 3:18 **Then shall ye return, and discern between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth God and him that serveth him not.**
 - a. The context of this passage explains that Israel shall one day be able to truly judge those that serve God and those that do not.

- b. In the book of Malachi, God continually informs Israel of their sins, and Israel continually declares their innocence of sin.
 - 3. Jeremiah 15:19 – **Therefore thus saith the LORD, If thou return, then will I bring thee again, and thou shalt stand before me: and if thou take forth the precious from the vile, thou shalt be as my mouth: let them return unto thee; but return not thou unto them.**
 - a. God desires Israel to return to him, and be able to tell what is good and what is bad – according to God’s word, not according to their own understanding.
 - 4. In Malachi, God reveals that Israel shall return (in the future), but in Jeremiah (which takes place before Malachi), God was still dealing with Israel to return.
 - 5. God’s people should always be able to tell what is right and what is wrong, as Abraham was able.
 - a. Genesis 18:23 – **And Abraham drew near, and said, Wilt thou also destroy the righteous with the wicked?**
 - b. Abraham knew God did not classify the wicked with the just, and would not judge them the same, nor treat them the same.
 - c. Just as God makes a difference between the righteous and the wicked, so should we.
 - d. We cannot tell whether a person is saved or not, but we can tell if their works are what God expects or not.
 - E. Other scriptures that teach this to be true are:
 - 1. Proverbs 12:26 – **The righteous is more excellent than his neighbour: but the way of the wicked seduceth them.**
 - a. The righteous is more excellent (in the eyes of God) than the wicked.
 - b. The righteous also need to understand that the way (the manner of living) of the wicked is appealing to the flesh, but destruction to the soul.
 - 2. Acts 10:34-35 – **Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: 35 But in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him.**
 - a. In every nation, there are those that are righteous before God and there are those that are reprobate.
 - b. The only way we can tell the difference is through the word of God, whether his word is accepted or excuses made.
- II. THAT SUCH ONLY AS THROUGH FAITH ARE JUSTIFIED IN THE NAME OF THE LORD JESUS, AND SANCTIFIED BY THE SPIRIT OF OUR GOD, ARE TRULY RIGHTEOUS IN HIS ESTEEM.
- A. Those who are righteous in God’s sight are those who have been set apart and dealt with by the Spirit of God in such a way that they willingly repent of their sins and put their faith in Jesus Christ as their Savior.
 - B. Romans 1:17, **The just shall live by faith.**
 - 1. The words, just, justified, right, righteous, and righteousness are all translations from the same Greek root word.
 - 2. To be justified the winner must be declared righteous by God (the judge).

3. The article of faith concerning justification should be read at this time for additional help.
4. Those who trust in Jesus Christ and him alone for that righteousness enjoy the blessing of righteousness.
- C. God is righteous and all those who are saved are declared to be righteous and they will act as a righteous person will act. I John 2:29, **If ye know that He is righteous, ye know that every one that doeth (practices) righteousness is (has been) born of (out of God as a source) Him.**
- D. Other scriptures that teach this truth:
 1. Romans 1:17 – **For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith.**
 2. Romans 7:6 – **But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter.**
 3. I John 2:29 – **If ye know that he is righteous, ye know that every one that doeth righteousness is born of him.**
 4. I John 3:7 – **Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doeth righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous.**
 5. Romans 6:18 – **Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness.**
 6. Romans 6:22 – **But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.**
 7. I Corinthians 11:32 – **But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world.**
 8. Proverbs 11:31 – **Behold, the righteous shall be recompensed in the earth: much more the wicked and the sinner.**
 9. I Peter 4:17-18 – **For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God? 18 And if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear?**

III. WHILE ALL SUCH AS CONTINUE IN IMPENITENCE AND UNBELIEF ARE IN HIS SIGHT WICKED, AND UNDER THE CURSE;

- A. 1 John 5:19 – **And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness.**
- B. Galatians 3:10 – **For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.**
- C. John 3:36 – **He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.**
- D. Isaiah 57:21 – **There is no peace, saith my God, to the wicked.**
- E. Psalm 10:4 - **The wicked, through the pride of his countenance, will not seek after God: God is not in all his thoughts.**
- F. Isaiah 55:6-7 – **Seek ye the LORD while he may be found, call ye upon him while he is near: 7 Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man**

his thoughts: and let him return unto the LORD, and he will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon.

IV. AND THIS DISTINCTION HOLDS AMONG MEN BOTH IN AND AFTER DEATH.

- A. Exhortations to be true in this life because we have internal righteousness, granted to us by God. What we do, we do before God, because we have his righteousness, not in order to gain his righteousness.
1. Luke 12:4-5 – **And I say unto you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do. 5 But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear: Fear him, which after he hath killed hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear him.**
 2. Luke 9:23-26- **And he said to them all, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me. 24 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it. 25 For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole world, and lose himself, or be cast away? 26 For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory, and in his Father's, and of the holy angels.**
 3. John 12:25-26 – **He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal. 26 If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will my Father honour.**
 4. Ecclesiastes 3:17 – **I said in mine heart, God shall judge the righteous and the wicked: for there is a time there for every purpose and for every work.**
 5. Proverbs 10:24 – **The fear of the wicked, it shall come upon him: but the desire of the righteous shall be granted.**
- B. Examples of the righteous and the wicked; both in this life and the life to come.
1. John 8:21-24 – **Then said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins: whither I go, ye cannot come. 22 Then said the Jews, Will he kill himself? because he saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come. 23 And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world. 24 I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins.**
 2. Jesus makes it very clear in these verses there is a vast difference between the righteous and the wicked.
 3. The wicked are from beneath, Jesus (and all his children) are from above.
 4. The two are together on this earth, but they are never mixed together.
 5. Gasoline and water will not mix; neither will the righteous and the wicked mix.
- C. More examples of the righteous and the wicked; both in this life and the life to come.

1. Proverbs 14:32 – **The wicked is driven away in his wickedness: but the righteous hath hope in his death.**
2. Luke 16:25 – **But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.**
3. Matthew 7:13-14 – **Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye. 14 And when he had called all the people unto him, he said unto them, Hearken unto me every one of you, and understand:**

SATAN

WE BELIEVE THAT SATAN IS REAL, THE AUTHOR OF SIN AND THE CAUSE OF THE FALL OF MAN; THAT HE IS THE OPEN AND DECLARED ENEMY OF GOD AND MAN; AND, THAT HE SHALL BE ETERNALLY PUNISHED IN THE LAKE OF FIRE.

- I. We are going to be studying this subject under the following headings.
 - A. Satan is real.
 - B. Satan is the author and cause of sin.
 - C. Satan is the enemy of God.
 - D. The final end of Satan.

One thing I need to say at the very beginning: Our problem with sin is not so much caused by Satan as it is caused by our own sinful natures. It is wrong to say, Satan made me do it, when the truth is we are deceived into sin by our own lust. There is no doubt Satan influences us into sin, but when we blame him, we do not blame ourselves.

II. WE BELIEVE THAT SATAN IS REAL.

- A. Job 1:6-7 – Satan was real when he appeared before God to ask the favor of tormenting righteous Job.
 1. Isaiah 14:12-17 – Satan was real when he aspired to sit on the throne of God.
 2. Matthew 4:2-11 – Satan was real when he tempted Christ.
 3. Revelation 20:10 – Satan is real when he is thrown into the Lake of Fire.
- B. God created everything, including Satan. Everything, including Satan is real.
 1. God created all things.
 - a. In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.
 - b. Psalm 89:11-12 – God has created the north and the south.
 - c. Isaiah 45:7 – God forms the light and the darkness. God makes peace and creates evil.
 - d. Isaiah 54:16 – God has created the waster to destroy.
 2. Colossians 1:16 – Everything has been created by God and for God.
 3. Revelation 4:11 – God has created all things, and for his pleasure they are and were created.
- C. God did not create Satan to be evil, but God did create Satan.
 1. Satan has free will and became evil.
 2. Compare the various creatures God created – some with no will, some with will, but no redemption, and us with free will, plus he would redeem us.
 - a. God created objects that have no life at all. These are planets, suns, moons, stars, rocks, minerals, etc.
 - b. God created plants, which have life, but have no feelings.
 - c. God created animals, which have life and feelings, but no eternal soul.
 - d. God created the living creatures of Ezekiel 1 and Revelation 4:6-9, which are descriptive of Christ and have no will of their own. They are designed by God to give him glory 24/7.
 - e. God created the Seraphims of Isaiah 6, which are so holy they burn in their own holiness, yet they give continual glory and honor to God.

- f. God created angels with a free will, yet never offered them salvation or redemption.
- g. God created humans with a free will yet offers eternal redemption to them.
- 3. Exodus 9:16 – God raised up Pharaoh for the sole purpose of showing the power of God.
 - a. God can raise up Satan to show his power forever.
 - b. God did not create Pharaoh evil.
 - c. Pharaoh was already evil.

III. THE AUTHOR OF SIN AND THE CAUSE OF THE FALL OF MAN

- A. Satan is created upright.
 - 1. Genesis 1:31 declare that God looked on his creation and saw that everything he had made was very good.
 - 2. This statement includes Satan, who had not fallen as yet.
 - 3. There was no sin or death in the world in Genesis 1:31.
- B. Between Genesis 2:25 and Genesis 3:1, pride drives Satan into rebellion.
 - 1. The time of his fall is after creation, not before creation or during creation.
 - a. Genesis 1:31 – When God finished creating, he said everything was very good.
 - b. When Jesus said this, there was no sin, no wickedness, no rebellion and no death in the world.
 - c. Satan had not fallen as yet.
 - 2. Genesis 3:1 – Satan came to the woman to deceive her.
 - a. At this point, Satan had fallen.
 - b. Ezekiel 28:12-19 and Isaiah 14:12-14 were being set in motion, although the secondary prophecies of these verses will not take place for a long time.
 - 3. Ezekiel 28:12-19 – This passage is double prophecy.
 - a. The primary prophecy is concerning the king of Tyrus.
 - b. The secondary prophecy is concerning Satan.
 - 1) Verse 12-15 refers to the condition of Satan before his fall.
 - 2) Verse 16-19 refers to the reasons Satan fell and the consequences of his fall.
 - 4. Isaiah 14:4-23 is another double prophecy.
 - a. The primary prophecy is written to the king of Babylon.
 - b. The secondary prophecy is written to Satan.
- C. The result of Satan's rebellion.
 - 1. Satan is given dominion over the world.
 - a. Job 9:24 – **The earth is given into the hand of the wicked: he covereth the faces of the judges thereof; if not, where, and who is he?**
 - 1) Job is speaking, therefore we can know this is correct.
 - 2) God owns the world (Psalms 24:1 – **The earth is the LORD'S, and the fulness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein.**) but, as we read in Job 9:24, the world has been 'given into the hand' of Satan temporarily; and Satan dominates it, subject to such limitations as God is pleased to impose.

- b. Matthew 4:8,9 – **Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and showeth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; 9 And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.**
 - c. Luke 4:6 – **And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it.**
 - d. Ephesians 2:2 – **Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience**
 - e. Psalm 76:10 – **Surely the wrath of man shall praise thee: the remainder of wrath shalt thou restrain.**
 - 1) Satan is the prince and power of the air, but just as God restrained Satan from killing Job, so Satan is restrained in the evil he is allowed to do.
 - 2) Revelation 9:4,5 – When these demons are released from the bottomless pit, they are restrained from hurting the people of God, but they are allowed to hurt the people who have not the seal of God in their foreheads. God restrains these demons from killing people, but allows them power to torment for the limited time of five months.
 - 3) Note the power of God over Satan, and that power continues today and will continue for all eternity.
2. Satan was given authority to sow tares in the world, which are his children – the non-elect.
- a. Matthew 13:25, 13:38-39 – Satan sowed tares in the world when he deceived the woman.
 - b. The tares are mixed in with the wheat.
 - c. There can be saved people in every family, even though they are born of lost parents.
 - d. There can be lost children in every family, even though they are born of saved, Godly parents.
3. God’s people will wrestle against spiritual wickedness as long as we are in this world.
- a. Ephesians 6:12 – **For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.**
 - b. When this world is over, or our time on this earth is over, our personal battle against Satan will also be over.
4. Satan is given authority to accuse God’s children.
- a. Revelation 12:9,10 – **And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. 10 And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.**

- b. Job 1:6 – **Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the LORD, and Satan came also among them.**
 - c. Job 1:9 – **Then Satan answered the LORD, and said, Doth Job fear God for nought?**
 - d. Job 2:3-5 – **And the LORD said unto Satan, Hast thou considered my servant Job, that there is none like him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and escheweth evil? and still he holdeth fast his integrity, although thou movedst me against him, to destroy him without cause. 4 And Satan answered the LORD, and said, Skin for skin, yea, all that a man hath will he give for his life. 5 But put forth thine hand now, and touch his bone and his flesh, and he will curse thee to thy face.**
5. Satan begins accusing God's children with the wife of Adam.
- a. Genesis 3:1 – **Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?**
 - b. The accusations by Satan continue to every child of God.
- IV. THAT HE IS THE OPEN AND DECLARED ENEMY OF GOD AND MAN.
- A. Matthew 13 – Concerning the sowing of tares, Jesus said, **...an enemy hath done this...**
 - B. II Thessalonians 2:4 - **Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.**
- V. THAT HE SHALL BE ETERNALLY PUNISHED IN THE LAKE OF FIRE.
- A. The demons know they are awaiting the judgment of God.
 - 1. Matthew 8:29 – **And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?**
 - 2. It is very clear that these demons know they have torment coming, but they do not repent of any of their evil doings.
 - B. Satan knows he has but a short time.
 - 1. Revelation 12:9 – **Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.**
 - 2. The short time of Satan can be measured from creation, approximately 6000 years ago.
 - 3. This may seem like a long time to us, but compared to eternity, it is a very short time.
 - C. Satan knows he is under the continual authority of God because he always has to get permission before he can do anything – see Job.
 - D. Satan is cast into the bottomless pit, which is his abode.
 - 1. Revelation 20:1-3 – **And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. 2 And he laid**

hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, 3 And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season.

2. At the end of the 1,000 years, Satan will be turned loose on the earth once again.
 3. He will go out and lead a great multitude against God.
 4. Then cometh the end.
- E. Satan is cast into the Lake of Fire.
1. Revelation 20:10 – **And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.**
 2. Satan never stands before God in judgment as saved and lost people will stand before God. I personally think God has already judged him and he knows his condemnation is at hand.
- VI. The present abode of Satan.
- A. The following scriptures indicate that Satan's present abode is the bottomless pit, of which he is king.
1. Satan's present throne is in the bottomless pit, and he goes out into the world and into heaven.
 2. The throne of Christ is in the sides of the north, and he sits upon the circle of the earth.
- B. The bottomless pit is in this world, actually in the center of this world, and will, during the millennium reign of Christ come to the surface, where all people will be able to see the suffering of all the people in that place.
1. While Satan's abode is in the bottomless pit, he has been granted authority to move about in his dominion (this earth), where he is the prince and power of the air.
 2. Satan will be locked in his own home for 1,000 years, then the bottomless pit and death and all hell, and every unbeliever, including Satan will be finally cast into the Lake of Fire forever and ever.
- C. Scriptures showing the present and future abode of Satan.
1. Revelation 9:1 – **And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit.**
 2. Revelation 9:2 – **And he opened the bottomless pit; and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit.**
 3. Revelation 9:11 – **And they had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name Apollyon.**
 - a. The word king means leader, just as Jesus Christ is the king. The demons take all their orders from Satan and worship him as **their** king.
 - b. The word Abaddon means destruction.
 - c. The word Apollyon means destroyer.

4. Revelation 11:7 – **And when they shall have finished their testimony, the beast that ascendeth out of the bottomless pit shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them.**
5. Revelation 17:8 – **The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.**
6. Revelation 20:1 – **And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand.**
7. Revelation 20:3 – **And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season.**

LAWSUITS BETWEEN BELIEVERS

WE BELIEVE THAT CHRISTIANS ARE PROHIBITED FROM BRINGING CIVIL LAWSUITS AGAINST OTHER CHRISTIANS OR THE CHURCH TO RESOLVE PERSONAL DISPUTES. WE BELIEVE INDEPENDENCE BAPTIST CHURCH POSSESSES ALL THE RESOURCES NECESSARY TO RESOLVE PERSONAL DISPUTES BETWEEN MEMBERS. WE DO BELIEVE, HOWEVER, THAT A CHRISTIAN MAY SEEK COMPENSATION FOR INJURIES FROM ANOTHER CHRISTIAN'S INSURANCE COMPANY AS LONG AS THE CLAIM IS PURSUED WITHOUT MALICE OR SLANDER.

I. Introduction

- A. I knew of a Baptist church that took another Baptist church to court to see which church was a true church. At one time, both of the churches were one church, but as time progressed, the church split, and both sides claimed to be the true, original church. The court threw the case out.
- B. I knew a Baptist pastor who took his church to court to get paid for past vacation days he had not taken. The court threw the case out.
- C. Examples like this are a rebuke to the entire Christian community.

II. I Corinthians 6.

- A. Reasons why church members should not take other church members to court.
 - 1. It is necessary fully to understand I Corinthians 5 and how that chapter fits in with chapter 6.
 - a. In chapter 5, the church was not taking care of business, as they should.
 - b. In chapter 6, the church was allowing others to take care of their business.
 - c. They refused to judge that which **God** said was a sin, a rebuke, and a hindrance to worship and witnessing, but they wanted the secular world to judge that which **they** considered a sin, a rebuke, and a hindrance.
 - d. **Because** the church would not take care of their own business, they came to the place of allowing others to take care of their business.
 - 2. I Corinthians 5:12,13 – God judges those without, the church judges those within the membership of the church.
 - 3. Many churches today do not want to stand for anything; therefore they fall into more sin.
 - a. Many churches do not want to practice church discipline because they do not want to hurt anybody's feelings.
 - b. **Because** these churches do not practice church discipline, they fall into all kinds of wickedness and sin, and reproach.
- B. Churches must understand what judging is.
 - 1. Examples of Godly, Biblical judging.
 - a. Matthew 19:28 – Apostles will judge the 12 tribes of Israel, sitting on 12 thrones. The word judging is the same Greek word used in I Corinthians 6:2,3 for the word judge.
 - b. God gave Israel judges during the books of Judges.
 - 1.) Judges are judicial, not legislative.

- 2.) They enforce the laws; they do not make the laws.
 - 3.) Our forefathers knew the difference, but today, that principle is unknown.
 - 4.) The local church does not have, and never has had, the right to be a legislative body.
 - 5.) We are a judicial body.
 - 6.) We do what God declares we should do, using the Bible as a guide.
 - 7.) We are never to do what we think we ought to do.
- C. Saints will judge angels; therefore we are fully qualified to judge each other.
1. When people judge angels, they would necessarily be above them.
 2. There will be a change of status in eternity.
 3. Hebrews 2:7 is a quote from Psalms 8:5, continuing to Hebrews 2:9 – Jesus was made a little lower than the angels when he was made a human, but (I John 3:2) we will be like Christ in eternity.
 4. Romans 8:15 – We have received the spirit of adoption.
 5. Romans 8:23 – We are waiting for the completion of the adoption process, the redemption of our bodies.
 6. Galatians 4:5 – We are redeemed from under the law that we might receive the adoption of sons.
 7. Ephesians 1:5 – We are predestinated unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself.
 8. The Bible assumes that saved people will naturally seek out other saved people and separate themselves from the world (or perhaps that lost people will separate themselves from saved people), they would automatically be scripturally baptized, then become a member of that local church, or they would form a scriptural Baptist church.
 - a. Today, many people believe in a universal church, so they cannot understand what it means to believe in a local church.
 - b. Many local churches are full of confusion because they are not following Christ, therefore many people do not want to have anything to do with them.
- D. I Corinthians 6:1, 2 – judge in this world is the same word as judge in eternity.
1. The word judge means to come to a determination.
 2. The determination is always by the Word of God, never our own personal opinions, or preferences.
- E. Saints are saved people, who are in the church, not saints as in Catholicism.
1. This shows that saints automatically gravitate toward other saints, thus a church is formed.
 2. Today, that does not seem to be the case, as there are saints in every denomination and every church.
 3. That is why Christ declares to them in Revelation 18:4 to Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.
- F. True Godly churches are a community separate and apart from the rest of the world.

1. Christ told us to come out from among them and be ye separate, II Corinthians 6:14-18.
 2. One of the very major problems in this world is that people want the church and the world to be one and the same.
- G. I Corinthians 6:4 - **If then ye have judgments of things pertaining to this life, set them to judge who are least esteemed in the church.**
1. The point is not to pick out the person in the church that is the least learned to decide cases.
 2. The point is that the person that **might** be considered the least able to judge a matter in the church is much more able than any person in the world to judge the same matter.
- H. I Corinthians 6:6 - **But brother goeth to law with brother, and that before the unbelievers.**
1. The church had caused unbelievers to rebuke believers, which is a bad thing.
 2. Unbelievers have been able to look into the very personal matters of church members in order to make a judgment of right or wrong, which is a bad thing.
 3. Verse 7 – It would be better to suffer wrong rather than let unbelievers make a judgment of personal matters instead of the church making that judgment.
 4. Verse 8 – Church members taking church members to court has caused a great harm to the spiritual growth of brothers.
 5. Verse 9-11 – The unrighteous are not even in the kingdom, much less able to make any sort of spiritual evaluation of what God considers right or wrong.
 6. Verse 11 – Remember when you were in the world? And all the trouble you were in?
 7. Verse 12 – Going to court puts you under the authority of the courts – unbelievers. Paul will not be under the authority of any person except God. A good thing for us to keep in our minds.
 8. Verse 13 – There should be a separation of secular and spiritual things.
 - a. When church members take church members to court, they are putting more emphasis upon temporal things than eternal things.
 - b. God is going to destroy all temporal things.
 - c. Only the things done for Christ (spiritual things) will last.
 9. Verse 15 –Fornication is an ungodly power that is over the flesh or spirit.
 - a. When a church member goes to court, they are putting themselves under the authority of the court – thus other church members will be affected.
 - b. Thus the entire church will be affected, not only because young church members will not understand how to conduct themselves when there are disagreements, but because the present situation requires some sort of solution which is prescribed by the court instead of by the local church.

III. Conclusion.

- A. Because of this present evil world, and the need for insurance, there are certain concessions made.
1. Insurance is a required evil today.
 2. Insurance companies will not pay unless they are forced to pay.

3. Because of this fact, it is sometimes necessary for church members to sue other church members.
- B. Ephesians 4:31-32 states, **Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice: 32 And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.**
 1. Even though it is sometimes necessary for church members to sue other church members, there is never a reason to have bitterness, wrath, or anger toward other church members.
 2. I remember a case in a church where the insurance company forced church members to sue each other.
 3. They joked with each other about suing each other, and had no hard feelings toward each other at all.

GIVING

WE BELIEVE THAT EVERY CHRISTIAN, AS A STEWARD OF THAT PORTION OF GOD'S WEALTH ENTRUSTED TO HIM, IS OBLIGATED TO SUPPORT HIS LOCAL CHURCH FINANCIALLY. WE BELIEVE THAT GOD HAS ESTABLISHED THE TITHE AS A BASIS FOR GIVING BUT THAT EVERY CHRISTIAN SHOULD ALSO GIVE OTHER OFFERINGS SACRIFICIALLY AND CHEERFULLY TO THE SUPPORT OF THE CHURCH, THE RELIEF OF THOSE IN NEED, AND THE SPREAD OF THE GOSPEL. WE BELIEVE THAT A CHRISTIAN RELINQUISHES ALL RIGHTS TO DIRECT THE USE OF THE TITHE OR OFFERING ONCE THE GIFT HAS BEEN MADE.

Proverbs 3:9,10 states, **Honour the LORD with thy substance, and with the firstfruits of all thine increase: 10 So shall thy barns be filled with plenty, and thy presses shall burst out with new wine.**

Acts 4:34-37 – **Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were possessors of lands or houses sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold, 35 And laid them down at the apostles' feet: and distribution was made unto every man according as he had need. 36 And Joses, who by the apostles was surnamed Barnabas, (which is, being interpreted, The son of consolation,) a Levite, and of the country of Cyprus, 37 Having land, sold it, and brought the money, and laid it at the apostles' feet.**

I Corinthians 16:2 – **Upon the first day of the week let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.**

II Corinthians 9:6-7 – **But this I say, He which soweth sparingly shall reap also sparingly; and he which soweth bountifully shall reap also bountifully. 7 Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him give; not grudgingly, or of necessity: for God loveth a cheerful giver.**

Galatians 6:6 – **Let him that is taught in the word communicate unto him that teacheth in all good things.**

Ephesians 4:28 – **Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth.**

I Timothy 5:17-18 – **Let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine. 18 For the scripture saith, Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn. And, The labourer is worthy of his reward.**

I John 3:17 – **But whoso hath this world's good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him?**

Some Considerations About Tithing

We believe in giving the tenth of our gross salary to the Lord as a tithe. Anything above the tenth is an offering. For the self-employed person the tithe is given on the increase. (What is left over after your **business** expenses.)

A true story is told of a farmer who wanted to know how he could tithe since his income mostly came in once a year. If he tithed on the income from his crop, everybody would know when he tithed and how much. He didn't want that. So he decided to calculate how much he should earn by farming, divide that into 52 weeks, and give an offering each week. He would make up the difference at the time the crop came in. If he didn't make any money farming that year, his offering would be an offering, not a tithe. That would all be decided at the end of the year, according to how his finances came out. As it turned out, the Lord gave him the best crop of his life.

This farmer was saved at the age of 36 and decided not to farm on Sunday because that was God's day, and to tithe. The first year he didn't farm on Sunday, it rained every week, clearing so there would be one full day to harvest - Sunday. He didn't run his combines on Sunday, but got out early on Monday. It rained about noon on Monday and continued just enough rain so combining couldn't continue until Sunday, when the whole process started all over again. The other farmers tried to pressure him into working on Sunday, but he wouldn't. When the season was almost over, the farmer didn't have much of his crop gathered, but most of the other farmers were finished. All these farmers got together and harvested his crop for him. his faith paid off!

Another time the farmer's crop of soybeans was almost ½ corn. When he took that load of beans to the elevator, the operator took a sample and declared about 3% was foreign. The farmer went into the office and asked the operator to come look at his load because it was far more than 3% foreign. The operator looked at the load, but refused to increase the foreign material, saying he would trust his sample more than his eye. This is another example of non-religious people helping a man who was full of faith.

This farmer died at the age of 38 years - a man full of faith and of excellent reputation.

For the person who is not self-employed, we believe in tithing on your salary before any deductions are taken out. This means to figure your tithe before any taxes, hospitalization, or anything else is taken out of your check. A lot of people don't do this because that means they will have to pay more to the Lord. They don't seem to understand that God sees the unwillingness of their heart.

Lost people should tithe – There is no scripture that excludes them.

WE BELIEVE THAT EVERY CHRISTIAN, AS A STEWARD OF THAT PORTION OF GOD'S WEALTH ENTRUSTED TO HIM, IS OBLIGATED TO SUPPORT HIS LOCAL CHURCH FINANCIALLY. WE BELIEVE THAT GOD HAS ESTABLISHED THE TITHE AS A BASIS FOR GIVING BUT THAT EVERY

CHRISTIAN SHOULD ALSO GIVE OTHER OFFERINGS SACRIFICIALLY AND CHEERFULLY TO THE SUPPORT OF THE CHURCH, THE RELIEF OF THOSE IN NEED, AND THE SPREAD OF THE GOSPEL.

I. Old Testament.

A. Before the law given to Moses.

1. Genesis 14:20 - **And blessed be the most high God, which hath delivered thine enemies into thy hand. And he gave him tithes of all.** Abraham gave tithes to Melchizedek. This was when the world was some 2000 years old. Abraham was born when the world was 2006 years old.
 - a. A very interesting point: where did Abraham get the idea to give a tenth to the Lord?
 - 1.) Abraham gave tithes before the law was given to Moses.
 - 2.) The law given to Moses was not new; it was the same law that was understood by Christian people before it was written down.
 - 3.) The law given to Moses clarified the law that God had given to Adam, who had orally passed the law to other generations.
 - b. Another point: where did Noah get the understanding about clean and unclean animals before they were explained in the law given to Moses? Compare Genesis 7:2 with Leviticus 11. The events of Genesis came before the book of Leviticus was written!
 - 1.) The answer is that Noah understood the division God had made between unclean and clean animals before God wrote it down for Moses.
 - 2.) There was nothing new in the law, only a new description given to men because of the hardness of their hearts and the forgetfulness of their minds.
 - c. Another point: Melchizedek is a priest forever: How could he be a priest before the law given to Moses established the priesthood?
 - 1.) The priesthood was already established by God, but was only written down by Moses.
 - 2.) Melchizedek was a priest typical of the priesthood of Jesus Christ.
2. Genesis 28:22 - Jacob giving tithes to the Lord.

B. Under the Law of Moses.

1. Leviticus 27:30 - All the tenth of the increase belongs to the Lord.
 - a. God collects interest.
 - b. Leviticus 27:31 - God collects 20% for non-payment of tithes.
2. Numbers 18:24 - The heave offering of the firstfruits is to go to the priest.
3. Numbers 18:26-28 - The priest is to tithe of their income.
4. II Chronicles 31:5, 6, 12 - Israel tithing in the days of King Hezekiah.
5. Proverbs 3:9,10 states, **Honour the LORD with thy substance, and with the firstfruits of all thine increase: 10 So shall thy barns be filled with plenty, and thy presses shall burst out with new wine.**
 - a. If a person tithes so that they will receive from God, they probably will not receive because they are giving tithes for the wrong reason.
 - b. If a person tithes to God because they love God, God will make them satisfied even if they do not have a lot.

- c. God can make us happier with his blessings than with great material wealth.
 6. Nehemiah 10:34-39 - Israel tithing in the days of Nehemiah.
 - a. The context of II Chronicles 31:5,6, 12, and Nehemiah 10:34-39, reveals that when backsliding Israel desired to repent and receive revival from God, they determined they would tithe.
 - b. This reflects that when we backslide (in a state of rebellion); we will withhold our tithes from God.)
 7. Amos 4:4 - Israel offered tithes without worshipping God.
 - a. They gave tithes as a matter of works, not of faith.
 - b. They did it for themselves, not for God.)
 8. Malachi 3:8,9 - Israel robbed God by not giving tithes.
 - a. Amos 4:4 and Malachi 3:8,9 reveals that God does look to see if we give our tithes and offerings, as we should.
 - b. He looks at our hearts to see if we love him and trust him enough to depend entirely upon him for all our lives, and the things experienced in our lives.
 9. Mark 12:41-44 - The story of the widow's mite: gives an illustration of the way God looks into our giving.
- II. New Testament.
- A. Malachi 3:1-4 - fulfilled in Matthew 21:12 and 23:23.
 1. Matthew 21:12 - Jesus cleansed the temple of God of money exchangers.
 2. Matthew 23:23 - Jesus condemned the scribes and Pharisees of omitting the weightier matters of the law while continuing tithing.
 - B. I Corinthians 9:1-18 - the New Testament fulfillment of Numbers 18:24.
 1. Israel gave their tithes to the Levites for their living because they didn't have any inheritance in Israel.
 2. Today, people are to give their tithes to the ministry of Jesus Christ.
 - C. Ministers are commissioned by Christ to preach his Word, and spend their time in prayer and the ministry of the Word.
 1. They don't have time to devote to working to supply for their own families.
 2. The people of Christ should oversee the physical welfare of their ministers and their families as the ministers oversee their spiritual welfare.
 - D. Hebrews 7:1-8 - The New Testament proof of tithing by using Genesis 14:20.
 1. Abraham gave tithes of all to Melchizedek, who was and is a priest of the most high God.
 2. We give our tithes to Christ (through his kind of churches over which He is the head) who is a priest forever after the order of Melchizedek.
- III. Objections to tithing.
- A. I Corinthians 16:2 - Give our offering on the first day of the week.
 1. This passage is not speaking about tithing, or giving an offering for the support of the ministry.
 2. It is plainly talking about the collection for the saints.

3. The various churches in Galatia took up this collection for the poor saints in Jerusalem.
 - B. II Corinthians 9:6-7 - This passage is frequently given, declaring that a person ought to give willingly, not sparingly, and he ought to be happy to give, for ...**God loveth a cheerful giver.**
 1. It is declared that it is more important to give of a willing heart than to give grudgingly, or of necessity.
 2. This passage, however, is not talking about tithing.
 3. Just as I Corinthians 16, this passage is talking about giving an offering (which is above and beyond the tithe and offering given for the support of the ministry) for the poor saints in Jerusalem.
 - C. The only objection I have ever heard against tithing was by a man who believed that tithing limited the amount he could give.
 1. This man gave much more than 10% to the Lord.
 2. I think he had more objections to using the word tithing than he did in practicing.
- IV. WE BELIEVE THAT A CHRISTIAN RELINQUISHES ALL RIGHTS TO DIRECT THE USE OF THE TITHE OR OFFERING ONCE THE GIFT HAS BEEN MADE.
- A. Many people and churches require missionaries to give an account of all monies they receive and how they spend that money.
 1. I believe this is wrong, because that makes the missionaries responsible to the churches that give the money and not to God.
 2. God knows how to take care of his missionaries and his churches, and we should let him do it, and not get in his way.
 3. If God puts on our heart to give money, it is our responsibility to give it.
 4. How that person spends our gift is their responsibility.
 5. I do not hold them accountable, God does.
 6. The case of Ananias and Sapphira concludes that a person has the right to do with their own, but they should not lie about anything.
 - B. This is specifically speaking about designative offerings.
 1. A designated offering is when the person gives an offering to the church and tells the church how to spend it.
 2. Giving a designative offering to the church takes authority away from the church and puts that authority into the hands of the person giving the offering.
 3. If you want to give a gift to a person without that person knowing who gave you the gift, do not give the money to the church and require the church to give it to them.
 - a. When you do that, you are taking authority away from the church.
 - b. Find another way to give to the person so they do not know.
 - c. It might be good for the person to know you are giving them a gift.

Giving To the Poor

Luke 6:35 - But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest:

for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil.

Introduction

This message is not about helping the needy, but about giving to the poor. These are two very different things.

In the course of this message, I want to show how helping bums continue to be bums is not a command of God, but a guilt trip put on Christians by those not willing to work.

It is not wrong to help people who are in financial trouble through no fault of their own. Almost every person, at one time or another will be needy through circumstances that are not their fault. Medical expenses, loss of jobs, so forth, happen to almost everybody. It is not wrong to help those people, especially if they are publicly associated with God's work before the tragedy overtook them.

It is wrong to take the Lord's money and give it to those that refuse to work, who seek instead to live off the fat of the land, begging for a living. By the way, there is good money in begging – and there are no taxes to pay.

Tithes and offerings are given to the church. Helping the poor is on top of that. I know a man who gives 10% of his income as a tithe to the church, then gives offerings to the church on top of that, then sets aside 5% of his income to help the needy.

My question does not involve helping people in need. That is a given in scripture. My question involves how much we should help those in need, whether we should help the poor, and which needy person, or poor person do we help. Are we really helping the poor by giving them money, or by paying their bills? It is evident in our society that people are taught that the world owes them a living, especially that churches have no other purpose on this earth other than to feed those that refuse to work. I think everybody feels pity for and wants to help those that truly need help.

My question is: Does God expect us to give to every beggar, everything they ask. I have made the specific statement, "Many would agree to help the poor out of **church funds**, but I believe the real test of helping the poor is – would you help them out of your **own funds**." It is easy to give that which we have already given, but when we give church funds, we are giving the Lord's money, not our money. I believe we should have the same consideration (or more) for where the Lord's money goes as we would where our money goes.

Some scriptures about giving to the poor

1. Luke 6:35 - **But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil.**
2. Matthew 5:42 - **Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away.**
3. Proverbs 19:17 – **He that hath pity upon the poor lendeth unto the LORD; and that which he hath given will he pay him again.**

4. Luke 3:11 - **He answereth and saith unto them, He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do likewise.**
5. John 13:29 - **For some of them thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy those things that we have need of against the feast; or, that he should give something to the poor.**

The question here is not that the church gave to the poor – they did. The questions are: Who are the poor? And where did the money come from? This article will explain that the poor are the poor and needy of the household of faith, and the money comes from the individual members of the church, not necessarily from church funds.

Some examples of how our society believes poor people are entitled to be helped, and how Christians are obligated to help.

1. Dona Eva is a strange lady. She is, by her own admission, a poor lady. She is also a widow with three sons, one in prison for homicide. Society has taught her that if she is poor, everybody owes her a living. Therefore she begs door-to-door. Our door included. After all, this is her right. If no one answers the doorbell soon enough she gets to yelling and hammering on the front gate. After all, she has this right. She came to Sunday School studies in our home on one occasion, but we found out later that morning that it seemed she came to stay for lunch. After all, she has this right. We had to begin locking our front gate more carefully because she would let herself in without any warning. After she came by begging one night after we had all been tucked into bed, I knew we had to come to an understanding. We endeavored to teach her that she had no such right but that her two working sons had a responsibility toward her. She evidently understood and our home is at peace again. Oh the joys of a socialistic country! ³ And he is living in Brazil! But the United States is also a socialistic country! (Perhaps not in name, but in action.)
2. During one of our fellowship meetings at IBC (I do not remember if it was a Bible Institute, or a revival meeting) we were having sandwiches at the church building, when a beggar came, asking for food. Brother Cecil fixed the man a sandwich and a drink, and brought it to him in the auditorium. As the man sat on the back pew, eating his sandwich, he said, “This is what churches are for.” I asked him what he meant. He said, “You know, churches are to be charitable. They are to feed the poor, like Jesus did.” I said to him, “Churches are not just for feeding the poor, actually the poor have wanted churches to give them more than Jesus would have given them. Jesus did feed the 5,000, and the 3,000. But he only fed them one time, and he only fed them after they had followed him into the wilderness, hearing his preaching. Now, we are feeding you one time, and right there is the door, and you can now leave, and don’t come back.” I do not feel the least regretful for helping the man, or giving him some food. Many people today do not think they should work, but instead put a guilt trip on believers, knowing they are a “soft touch” and desiring to obey God. These kinds of people use our belief in Christ, and our desire to be obedient to him against our conscience, telling us we have no compassion, or that we are not Christian if we do not help them.

³ Copied from the weekly prayer letter of Calvin Gardner, 19 December, 04.

Definition of a poor person

A poor person is a person who does not have what the normal person in society has. What is a sluggard? The sluggard is slow, lazy, and slothful. A poor person might be a sluggard, but he might not be.

1. Proverbs 6:6 - **Go to the ant, thou sluggard; consider her ways, and be wise:**
2. Proverbs 6:9 - **How long wilt thou sleep, O sluggard? when wilt thou arise out of thy sleep?**
3. Proverbs 10:26 - **As vinegar to the teeth, and as smoke to the eyes, so is the sluggard to them that send him.**
4. Proverbs 13:4 - **The soul of the sluggard desireth, and hath nothing: but the soul of the diligent shall be made fat.**
5. Proverbs 20:4 - **The sluggard will not plow by reason of the cold; therefore shall he beg in harvest, and have nothing.**
6. Proverbs 26:16 - **The sluggard is wiser in his own conceit than seven men that can render a reason.**

There is a difference between a poor person and a sluggard.

Jesus fed the hungry

1. **5,000 fed** - In Matthew 14:13-21 – Jesus fed 5,000 who followed him into the wilderness to hear the Word of God. Jesus did not feed anybody who did not come to hear the Word of God. The Sunshine Mission in St. Louis (and other such missions around the country) often feed people only after they hear the Word of God. This plan is often discouraged, because it is said the preacher is bribing poor people and forcing them to hear that to which they may disagree. Nobody is forcing people to stay at Sunshine Mission or any other mission. The people are free to leave and seek food somewhere else. In Matthew 14:31-21, there were apparently towns within walking distance. Jesus fed the people, not just because they were hungry, but; as is related in Matthew 16:9, that the disciples might understand the power of God to supply all material needs, and later they would understand the leaven of the Pharisees.
2. **4,000 fed** - Matthew 15:29-39 - Jesus fed 4,000 only after they had followed Jesus after three days. There is no doubt many of these people had little to eat in the preceding days, and Christ would not send them away hungry.
3. It must be noted that Jesus did not feed the poor in these verses. He fed those that had followed him, seeking his healing power in their lives, and in the lives of their loved ones.
4. The early church was not involved in feeding vast numbers of people, or even people who came to them asking for help. That is socialism, not Christianity. Socialism trains people to believe and think that others have an obligation, sometimes even a Christian obligation to take care of those that refuse to take care of themselves.

The welfare system God ordained in the nation of Israel is vastly different from the welfare system established in the United States, or any other socialist government.

1. Exodus 22:25 - **If thou lend money to any of my people that is poor by thee, thou shalt not be to him as an usurer, neither shalt thou lay upon him usury.**
 - Note the word if, not when.
 - There is a difference in lending money to the poor and giving it to them.
 - Giving money to the poor is the same as lending to the Lord.
2. The welfare system in Israel never involved charity or just giving money or paying bills. An individual purchased the poor person and they worked for their necessities. Our government is in the welfare business, which is much abused. It would not be so abused if left to local control.
 - Leviticus 25:35-38 – Individuals (not the government of Israel) were to relieve the poor of Israel.
 - Leviticus 25:39-46 – Those able to purchase the poor until the year of Jubilee would purchase them.
 - Leviticus 25:47-55 – What to do if an Israelite sells himself into the hands of a stranger or sojourner.
3. The welfare system of the United States is a continual drain upon the economy.
 - The government pays people (with our tax money) to establish criteria whereby some are judged worthy of public support.
 - The government pays people (with our tax money) to establish who will work for the government in the welfare system.
 - The government pays people (with our tax money) to pay out that which other government officials have determined needs to be paid out.
 - The government pays people (with our tax money) to make sure the right people receive the government dole.
 - The government pays people (with our tax money) to prosecute those that abuse the system.
 - The entire system could be much, much simpler if the federal government was left completely out of it all, and only local governments took care of it.
 - But if all government was left out of it, and local, individual citizens took care of needy people, there would be far less abuse of the system.
 - God knew what he was doing when he established in the nation of Israel a welfare system dependent on the people, and not on the government.
 - Israel did not pay any taxes to the government. Individuals took care of all expenses.
4. Relate the story of Davy Crockett when he was a representative and the House of Representatives wanted to give some money to a widow of a representative (the man had also been a hero in a war). Davy Crockett objected to giving her help from the general treasury because he said that was not the purpose of the treasury. He told the representatives they could give of their own funds to help the woman if they really believed in helping her. He told them how much he was willing to give of his own money, but the representatives did not listen to him, and gave the widow money from the general treasury. It is easier to give that which we have already given. From this small beginning, the welfare system of the United States of America came into being.

The early church helped their own before they helped those outside the church.

1. Galatians 6:10 states, **As we have therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the household of faith.**
 - There is nothing wrong with helping lost people, or those not in the church (this is always a local church, especially the church where we are members).
 - But if we are going to help anybody, we should help those of the household of faith first.
 - IBC helped Pastor Darryl Titus with his medical expenses by giving him \$1,000.00 out of church funds. Brother Darryl Titus is of the household of faith. It would be impossible and impractical for IBC to help every person who has medical expenses, but it is good if we can help those within the household of faith.
 - IBC helped Salem Baptist Church help with the medical expenses of their pastor by giving them \$1,000.00 out of church funds. I believe we were following Biblical principles by helping those of the household of faith. I do not think we are obligated to help those not in the faith, but if the Lord so leads, it is okay to do so. There is no mandate in scripture for doing so.
2. Acts 6 – There is much dispute as to exactly who these Grecian widows were, but all commentaries I checked are in agreement they were all members of the first church.
 - It seems the practice of helping widows was soon stopped, or at least greatly modified.
 - Why it was stopped or modified is not given, but abuses of any system often cause that system of benefit to be stopped, or modified.
3. II Timothy 5:3-16 – There were some very strict restrictions made to the church in helping poor widows.
 - The family is to help them first.
 - There is no mention made in this passage of helping those widows outside the church.
4. Acts 11:27-30 – Because of the prophecy of a dearth throughout all the world, the churches of Antioch determined to send relief to the brethren which dwelt in Judea.
 - The churches of Antioch believed the prophecy, and acted accordingly.
 - They did not send relief to all the afflicted in Judea, but only to the brethren.
 - Barnabas and Saul distributed these funds as directed by the churches.
 - I Corinthians 16:1-4 – Paul would take funds collected throughout Galatia, even to Corinth, and distribute unto Jerusalem.
 - If we let scripture interpret scripture, Paul would distribute to the brethren at Jerusalem, not to the general public, or to all those that asked for it.

This was printed in the St. Louis Post Dispatch during the summer of 2002, or 2003. Each spring, summer, and fall, there are people camped on the Missouri side of the Mississippi River, in the hills overlooking the Mississippi River. Churches that continually bring them food mostly feed them. They are given more food than they need, and often throw away food, knowing the good hearted Christians will bring them more food, and some even going so far as to arrange medical care for them.

CREATION

WE BELIEVE THAT GOD CREATED THE UNIVERSE IN SIX LITERAL 24-HOUR DAYS. WE REJECT EVOLUTION, THE GAP THEORY, THE DAY-AGE THEORY, THEISTIC EVOLUTION, AND EVERY OTHER THEORY OF CREATION EXCEPT THE SIX LITERAL 24-HOUR DAYS, AS RECORDED BY GOD IN GENESIS.

Part I

WE BELIEVE THAT GOD CREATED THE UNIVERSE IN SIX LITERAL 24-HOUR DAYS.

Introduction

God is the creator

Genesis 1:1 – **In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.**

Is this verse true or is it false? What you think about this verse reveals what you think of the entire word of God. Why would anybody not believe this verse is true? Because evolutionists have filled the world with the *theory* of evolution, proclaiming it is no longer a theory, but the truth.

Have you ever been on vacation and gone to a scenic overlook, and there before you (and your children) is a placard that states, “The scene before you was produced millions of years ago by ... so forth?” I know I have. Is this really true? Is the world millions of years old? Did God really create the world?

It seems to me that evolution has taken a front seat in our society. As our society has turned farther and farther away from God, this is a natural conclusion – that God is not our creator, that we just happened to be on this earth by chance.

- I. God has created the heaven and the earth and all that therein is.
 - A. The word “beginning” means first, or the beginning.
 1. If this is truly the beginning, then there was nothing before it as far as humans and this creation are concerned.
 - a. Genesis 1:1 is not the beginning of God, because God has never had a beginning, nor will he ever have an ending.
 - b. God is eternal, while the earth and the entire universe is temporary, and material.
 2. Job 38:4-7 - God asks Job where he was when God created the foundations of the earth in the beginning when the morning stars sang for joy.
 - a. Revelation 22:16 - Jesus Christ is the morning star.
 - b. Indications in Job are that the morning stars (plural) are the angels that God created to praise him and be his messengers to the earth.
 - B. God created the living creatures (of Ezekiel and Revelation) before time was created.

1. This reveals that God knew from all eternity that he was going to create man, that man would fall, and that Jesus would come to die for the sins of sinners.
 2. It is very possible that these living creatures were not created in the sense we think of creation.
 3. It is possible that they are representatives of God to fleshly mankind.
 4. We cannot see or begin to comprehend God, his majesty, and his splendor, or the living creatures.
 5. These living creatures are there to help us understand how great God is and to reveal to us the incomprehensibility of God.
- C. God created the living creatures in his own image and after his own likeness, and they do nothing at all, but praise him day and night, 24 hours a day. They have no will of their own, or any desire to do anything but praise God.
1. Ezekiel 1:5-10 – The living creature represents God as he appears to man.
 2. God has made other living creatures.
 - a. Genesis 1:21 – God made living creatures – from the water, and also fowls of the air.
 - b. Genesis 1:24 – God made living creatures – cattle, beasts, and creeping things.
 - c. These living creatures, which dwell on the earth, are different from the living creatures that live in heaven, yet they are all described as “living creatures”.
 3. Ezekiel 10:14,15 – Another description of the living creatures, and their faces.
 4. Revelation 4:7 – Another description of the living creatures, and their faces.
 - a. The face of a lion – the face of one who rules, as in Matthew, where Christ is revealed to be a king.
 - b. The face of a calf, or an ox – as revealed in Mark, where Christ is presented as a servant. Ezekiel 10:14 – this face is described as a cherub, or an imaginary one.
 - c. The face of a man – the face of Christ as a man, as revealed in the book of Luke.
 - d. The face of a flying eagle – the face of divinity or the suffering Saviour as revealed in the book of John.
 5. The marvelous thing about God creating these living creatures is that they are alive. He did not create an inanimate object, which repeated a program installed in it, which program or machine had no life at all.
 - a. I could create a machine with a voice and program it to repeat over and over again how good I am.
 - b. This is not what God did. He created a living creature that reflected his very image and person, and that living creature gives eternal glory and honor to God because that is the nature of the living creature. The living creature sees, understands and rejoices in the glory, power, and all the other attributes of God, and therefore gives praise to God. This is something like we will do when we see Jesus face to face. Every knee shall bow and every tongue shall confess. There will be nothing else to do.

6. The living creatures are also represented in the Shekinah glory that slowly left Israel after years of their rebellion against God.
 - a. There was a cloud that led the Israelites by day and a fiery pillar led them by night.
 - b. The cloud filled the tabernacle after it was completed.
 - c. The cloud filled the temple of Solomon when it was completed.
7. Isaiah 6:2,6 – God created Seraphims, which are so holy, they burn in their own holiness, yet they do not reflect their own holiness or righteousness, but constantly declared one to another, **Holy, holy, holy is the Lord of host, the whole earth is full of his glory.**
 - a. God created angels with wills, so they could either worship God or not. One-third of the angels rebelled against God and followed Satan to destruction.
 - b. God created humans when he knew they would rebel, and Satan would fill the earth with tares, Matthew 13:28.
 - c. Of all of God’s creatures, only angels and humans have a will. Only humans are granted opportunity for redemption. Joshua 24:14-17 – Joshua told the Israelites to make a choice about whether they would serve God or not. They chose to serve God and did serve him all the days of Joshua, and the next leader.
- D. A miracle to consider – God is in eternity, and is so powerful that he created beings that will go from time to eternity. Some will go to everlasting destruction, and some to everlasting life.
 1. God created angels before time began even though God knew 1/3 of the angels would follow Satan in rebellion, and they would spend their eternity in the Lake of Fire.
 2. God created this present heaven and earth, and he created it perfectly perfect, complete and whole.
 - a. God knew Satan would come to the earth, deceive the woman and the man would willingly follow his wife instead of God
 - b. God knew he would completely destroy this present heaven and earth and would establish a new heaven and a new earth wherein dwelleth righteousness.
 3. Psalm 19:1-3 – If the italics are left out of these verses, it reads: **The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handiwork. 2 Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night sheweth knowledge. 3 no speech nor language, their voice is not heard.**
 - a. All of God’s creation glorifies God and reveals a worldwide flood.
 - b. Men misread the signs of nature because they are blind to spiritual truths.
 4. God created man in his own likeness after his own image.
 - a. God gave men dominion over this present earth and everything on it
 - b. God gave men dominion even though he knew man would fall into sin and rebel against him in everything.
- E. Scriptures showing God created everything.
 1. Psalm 89:11,12 – Everything belongs to the Lord. He has created the north and the south. **The heavens are thine, the earth also is thine: as for the**

world and the fulness thereof, thou hast founded them. 12 The north and the south thou hast created them: Tabor and Hermon shall rejoice in thy name.

2. Psalm 102:18 – The people that shall be created (future generations) shall praise the Lord. **This shall be written for the generation to come: and the people which shall be created shall praise the LORD.**
 3. Psalm 104:30 – They are created and they praise the name of the Lord. When God hides his face from man, they are troubled, their breath goes away and they die and return to the dust. **Thou sendest forth thy spirit, they are created: and thou renewest the face of the earth.**
 4. Psalm 148:5 – Heaven is created, and all of this creation gives praise to the Lord. The heavens, the sun, the moon, the stars, and all the waters above the heavens. **Let them praise the name of the LORD: for he commanded, and they were created.**
 5. Proverb 16:4 - **The LORD hath made all things for himself: yea, even the wicked for the day of evil.**
 6. Isaiah 14:24 - **The LORD of hosts hath sworn, saying, Surely as I have thought, so shall it come to pass; and as I have purposed, so shall it stand:**
 7. Isaiah 45:18 – God has created the earth, made it, and established it to be inhabited. Don't worry about other planets having life on them. **For thus saith the LORD that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, he created it not in vain, he formed it to be inhabited: I am the LORD; and there is none else.**
 8. Isaiah 54:16 – God also creates the waster. **Behold, I have created the smith that bloweth the coals in the fire, and that bringeth forth an instrument for his work; and I have created the waster to destroy.**
 9. Ezekiel 28:13-15 (and beyond) – This is given to the king of Tyrus, but speaks spiritually of Satan, who was blessed in every way, but turned against God, and God found iniquity in him.
 10. John 1:3 - **All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.**
 11. Hebrews 1:10 - **And, Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of thine hands.**
 12. Revelation 4:11 - **Thou art worthy, IO Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.**
- II. Why did God take six days to create the world?
- A. He could have created it immediately if he had wanted to, but he took six literal 24-hour days.
 1. Exodus 20:8-11 - God intended to use the seven days of creation as a lesson for humankind.
 2. We are supposed to work for six days, then use the seventh day for worship of God.
 - B. How long is a day?
 1. Genesis 1:5 - The evening and the morning was the first day.

2. This is 24 hours long.
- III. What about dinosaurs?
- A. If there is a gap between Genesis 1:1 and 1:2, then the destruction of that world caused by Satan would not only have destroyed the dinosaurs, it would also have destroyed any evidence that dinosaurs existed.
 1. Many do not believe the earth is 6,000 years old.
 2. It is possible for a person to believe the earth is millions of years old, yet believe God created the earth.
 3. It is impossible for a person to understand the genealogy of the Bible and believe the earth is millions of years old.
 - B. It is likely there are still dinosaurs on the earth today.
 1. China has always been renowned for its dragon stories, and dragons have always been prominent on Chinese pottery, embroidery and carvings.
 2. England has its story of St. George, who slew a dragon that lived in a cave.
 3. In the tenth century, an Irishman wrote of his encounter with what appears to have been a Stegosaurus.
 4. In the 1500s, a European scientific book, *Historia Animalium*, listed several animals, which to us are dinosaurs, as still alive.
 5. A well-known naturalist of the time, Ulysses Aldrovandus, recorded an encounter between a peasant named Baptista and a dragon whose description fits that of the dinosaur *Tanystropheus*. The encounter was on May 13, 1572 near Bologna in Italy, and the peasant killed the dragon.
 6. So the evidence for the existence of dinosaurs during recorded human history is strong.⁴
 - C. We also have the description of two beasts that could very well have been such great reptilian creatures still existing in Job's day.
 1. The text records that God was showing Job how great he was as Creator, in causing him to observe some of the most powerful creatures he had made.
 - a. Job 40:15 - **Behold now behemoth, which I made with thee; he eateth grass as an ox. 16 Lo now, his strength is in his loins, and his force is in the navel of his belly. 17 He moveth his tail like a cedar: the sinews of his stones are wrapped together. 18 His bones are as strong pieces of brass; his bones are like bars of iron. 19 He is the chief of the ways of God: he that made him can make his sword to approach unto him.**
 - b. In many commentaries, behemoth is said to be an elephant or a hippopotamus.
 - c. However, this description is unlikely, since behemoth is said to have had a tail like a cedar.
 - d. Now if there is one thing an elephant's tiny tail is unlike, it is a cedar tree!
 - e. The elephant is quickly eliminated as a possibility for this beast.
 - f. In fact, after reading this passage in Job very carefully, one is hard put to find any living creature to fit the description.
 - g. The closest that we know could be *Brachiosaurus*, one of the dinosaurs.

⁴ The Answers Book, page 17,18. Published by Creation Science Foundation (Australia) and Master Books (USA) On Line Bible

2. Leviathan (Job 41:1) seems also to have been some form of fire-breathing dragon.
 - a. Job 41:19-21 - **Out of his mouth go burning lamps, and sparks of fire leap out. 20 Out of his nostrils goeth smoke, as out of a seething pot or caldron. 21 His breath kindleth coals, and a flame goeth out of his mouth.**
 - b. Most commentaries say this animal is a crocodile, but is very apparently not so.
 - c. For those who wonder about this, remember that the living bombardier beetle can shoot out super-heated gases in its own defense.
 - d. Why not leviathan?
- IV. Why don't people believe the Bible account of creation?
- A. Ecclesiastes 3:11 - **He hath made every thing beautiful in his time: also he hath set the world in their heart, so that no man can find out the work that God maketh from the beginning to the end.**
 - B. Eccl. 7:29 - **Lo, this only have I found, that God hath made man upright; but they have sought out many inventions.**
 1. God made man perfect, but subject to falling.
 2. Believers are better off than Adam. We can't fall.
 - C. Hebrews 11:3 – **Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear.**
 - D. If you do not believe there is a creator, you have no need of a Saviour, because there is no such thing as sin.
 1. According to I John 3:4, **Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law.**
 2. God gave the law, and if there is no creator, there is no God, there is no law, and there is no sin.
 3. Therefore, there is no hell, no heaven, nothing.
 4. We might as well act like animals because that is all we are.
 - E. The Biblical account of creation is treated as pure history in the following:
 1. Exodus 20:9-11 - We rest on the seventh day because God did.
 2. Exodus 31:17 – We keep the Sabbath day of resting because God created the heaven and earth in six days and rested on the Sabbath.
 3. Psalm 8 and Psalm 104, declare there is no thought but that God created the heavens and the earth.
 4. Matthew 19:4-6 - Christ believed that man was made male and female at the beginning. Note that the Pharisees were questioning divorce because they had forgotten the facts of the creation.
 5. II Peter 3:5 - Some folks are willingly ignorant of the fact that God spoke the creation into existence. Therefore they are ignorant of the fact of the soon return of the Lord.
 6. Hebrews 4:4 - God rested the seventh day from all his works. So they believed that God created the creation.
 - F. The Bible states that God made the creation out of nothing.

1. Romans 4:17 – Christ ...**calleth those things which be not as though they were.**
 2. Hebrews 11:3 - things that are seen were not made of things which do appear.
 3. Psalm 33:6, 9 – Christ made the heavens by his word, by the host of heaven and by the breath of his mouth.
 4. Amos 4:13 - The Lord, the God of hosts created all things.
- V. Genesis is to be interpreted literally.
- A. Some believe Genesis is to be interpreted allegorically.
 1. If Genesis is to be interpreted allegorically, why isn't the rest of the Bible interpreted allegorically.
 2. There is no clear scriptural division between that which is allegorical and that which is literal.
 3. The Bible is clear concerning that which is allegorical.
 - a. Revelation 1:1 states, **...and he sent and signified it by his angel unto his servant John.**
 - b. The word "signified" means to give a sign.
 - c. The prophecies given to Nebuchadnezzar and Belshazzar, and most of the prophets, were clearly allegorical.
 - B. We believe Genesis is to be interpreted literally, each day being 24 hours long, seven days being one week.
 1. Genesis 1:1-5 describes day one.
 - a. This is the beginning of this universe.
 - b. The earth was without form and was void.
 - c. God created light and separated the light from the darkness.
 2. Genesis 1:6-8 describes day two.
 - a. God created a firmament, which divided the waters of the atmosphere.
 - b. The firmament is called heaven.
 3. Genesis 1:9-13 describes day three.
 - a. God caused the dry land to appear, causing a separation between the seas and the landmass.
 - b. The earth brought forth grass, herbs, and fruit trees, after his kind.
 4. Genesis 1:14-19 describes day four.
 - a. God created lights in the heaven, which are for divisions, signs, seasons, and measurements.
 - b. The sun rules the day and the moon rules the night.
 5. Genesis 1:20-23 describes day five.
 - a. The waters bring forth moving creatures, and all sorts of fowl that reproduce after their own kind.
 - b. God also created great whales on this day.
 6. Genesis 1:24-31 describes day six.
 - a. The earth brings forth cattle, creeping things, and the beasts of the earth after their own kind.
 - b. God created man after his own likeness and the woman from the rib of Adam.

- c. God gave to man the authority to rule over all the creation, giving him full option to do with it as he pleased, withholding only eating from the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil.
7. Genesis 2:1-4 describes day seven.
 - a. God rested on this day, not because he was tired, but because he would be an example of how men ought to work six days and rest the seventh day, Exodus 8-11.
 - b. God said all his creation was very good; not good, but very good.
8. Genesis 2:5-25 gives a fuller description of the creation of Adam and his wife.

Part II

WE REJECT EVOLUTION, THE GAP THEORY, THE DAY-AGE THEORY, THEISTIC EVOLUTION, AND EVERY OTHER THEORY OF CREATION EXCEPT THE SIX LITERAL 24-HOUR DAYS, AS RECORDED BY GOD IN GENESIS.

- I. A condensed definition of evolution is a gradual process in which something changes into a different and usually more complex or better form.
- II. The Gap Theory is defined as placing an indeterminate amount of time between Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2.
 - A. There is no record of exactly when Satan was created by God, but when he was created, he was very good.
 1. God did not create anything that was bad.
 2. The traditional meaning is that there are millions of years between these two verses, when Satan was cast down from heaven and destroyed the first creation.
 3. If this was so, then death has come from something other than the sin of Adam.
 4. God said that the sin of Adam was what caused death to come to all the creation.
 5. Romans 5:12 - Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned:
 - B. Genesis 1:31 - God said that all of his creation was very good.
 1. If everything was very good, then Satan was also very good.
 2. He had not yet fallen.
 - C. There are many different versions of what happened during this supposed long period of time, but most versions place millions of years in this place.
 1. Most versions also place Satan's casting out of heaven and his coming to the earth and destroying the creation of God in this time frame.
 2. We reject the Gap Theory because the Bible nowhere give any indication of a gap between Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2.
 3. Genesis 1:31 informs us, **And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day.**

- a. God said all his creation was very good; therefore the creation was contaminated with sin, destruction, death or ruin.
 - b. Sin, which causes death, came into the world in Genesis 3, therefore Genesis chapter one and two speak of a perfect world.
- III. The Day-Age Theory holds that the six days referred to in the Genesis account of creation are not ordinary 24-hour days, but rather are much longer periods of thousands or millions of years.
- A. The Genesis account is then interpreted as an account of the process of cosmic evolution, providing a broad base on which any number of theories and interpretations are built.
 - B. Proponents of the Day-Age Theory can be found among theistic evolutionists and progressive creationists.
 1. Theistic evolutionists believe God initiated on earth then allowed evolutionary principles to bring man to where he is: maybe with a little help from God here and there.
 2. Progressive creationists change the meaning of “day” in the creation account - from a single rotation of the Earth, to a long, indefinite period of time (perhaps hundreds of millions of years each).
 - C. We reject the day-age theory because the Bible defines the length of a day.
 1. Genesis 1:5 states, **...And the evening and the morning were the first day.**
 2. God said one evening (a time of darkness) and one morning (a time of light) made one day.
 3. The Jews count their day as beginning in the evening, as God did when he created this world.
 4. The day-age theory is nothing more than another attempt to disregard the clear teachings of the scripture in favor of the ramblings of changeable “science”.
- IV. Progressive Creationists believe the day of Genesis 1 is not a day, but long ages. They reject the fact that a day is one complete rotation of the earth and insist a day is a long, indefinite period of time. They generally believe the following:
- A. The “Big Bang” is interpreted as God’s way of producing stars and galaxies through billions-of-years of natural processes.
 1. The Earth and universe are billions of years old.
 2. The days of Creation were overlapping periods of millions and billions of years.
 3. Death and bloodshed have existed from the very beginning of Creation and were not the result of Adam’s sin. Man was created after the vast majority of earth’s history of life and death had already taken place.
 4. The flood of Noah was local, not global and it had little affect on the Earth’s geology, which represents billions of years of history.
 - B. We reject the progressive creationism because:
 1. God spoke the worlds into existence; he did not use the “big bang”.
 2. The Bible makes it abundantly clear that the earth is approximately 6,000 years old, not millions or billions of years old.

3. God did not create a world full of death and bloodshed. Death and bloodshed came into the world because of sin; therefore death and bloodshed are abnormal, not normal.
 4. Fossils are the result of death and quick burial; therefore fossils give proof of a worldwide flood, not a local flood.
- V. Theistic Evolution is “atheistic evolution” with God added.
- A. Atheistic evolution has matter evolving over a long period of time with chance, necessary mutations, combined with selection of the fittest, and isolation.
 - B. In Theistic evolution God is simply added to the mixture, but God is not the omnipotent Lord of all things, whose Word has to be taken seriously by men, but he is integrated into the evolutionary philosophy. Hence Theistic evolution is very dangerous for Christians.

HUMAN SEXUALITY

WE BELIEVE GOD HAS COMMANDED THAT NO INTIMATE SEXUAL ACTIVITY SHOULD BE ENGAGED IN OUTSIDE OF A MARRIAGE BETWEEN A MAN AND A WOMAN. WE BELIEVE THAT ANY FORM OF HOMOSEXUALITY, LESBIANISM, BISEXUALITY, BESTIALITY, INCEST, FORNICATION, ADULTERY, AND PORNOGRAPHY ARE SINFUL PERVERSIONS OF GOD'S GIFT OF SEX.

- I. WE BELIEVE GOD HAS COMMANDED THAT NO INTIMATE SEXUAL ACTIVITY SHOULD BE ENGAGED IN OUTSIDE OF A MARRIAGE BETWEEN A MAN AND A WOMAN.
 - A. Adam was created by God, yet was incomplete without a marriage partner.
 1. Genesis 2:18-20 records that God caused all the animals to come before Adam, but no animal was suitable to be a help meet for Adam.
 2. Genesis 2:20 - **...but for Adam there was not found an help meet for him.**
 3. Genesis 2:21-22 – God created a suitable helpmeet from the rib of Adam and brought her to Adam, who named her woman.
 - a. The name woman has remained with females throughout time.
 - b. Genesis 3:20 declares that Adam changed the name of the woman to Eve after he understood the promised redeemer would come from her womb.
 - B. In Genesis 2:24-25 God ordained the first marriage in the Garden of Eden.
 1. A part of the happiness in the Garden of Eden is the marriage relationship.
 2. Six thousands years after Adam and Eve were cast out of the Garden of Eden, the primitive institution of marriage remains as the basic foundation of society.
 3. Adam declared that a man should leave his father and his mother and cleave to his wife.
 4. God did not say this for his sake, but for the sake of all the generations of Adam that will follow.
 5. Adam had no father and mother to leave, but he had a wife (not wives) to cling to.
 6. Genesis 4:19-24 – The first record of a man having more than one wife (polygamy). This is wrong, as seen by Lamech's attitude toward God and his judgments.
 - C. God approves sexual relation inside the marriage relationship.
 1. Hebrews 13:4 – **Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.**
 2. I Corinthians 7:1,2 – **Now concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me: It is good for a man not to touch a woman. 2 Nevertheless, to avoid fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband.**
 3. I Corinthians 7:4,5 – **The wife hath not power of her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own body, but the wife. 5 Defraud ye not one the other, except it be with consent for**

a time, that ye may give yourselves to fasting and prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency.

- a. God has ordained marriage so the normal God given sexual desires can be satisfied in a righteous manner.
- b. Any sexual desire that cannot be satisfied in the marriage relationship must be avoided at all cost.

II. WE BELIEVE THAT ANY FORM OF HOMOSEXUALITY, LESBIANISM, BISEXUALITY, BESTIALITY, INCEST, FORNICATION, ADULTERY, AND PORNOGRAPHY ARE SINFUL PERVERSIONS OF GOD'S GIFT OF SEX.

A. God condemns homosexuality and lesbianism.

1. Leviticus 18:22 – **Thou shalt not lie with mankind, as with womankind: it is abomination.**
2. Genesis 19:5, 13 – God destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah because of their sins against God. Sodomites believe they are being wrongly criticized in Genesis 19. They say Genesis 19:5 is not to know in a sexual way, but to get acquainted. They do not see verse 7; where Lot said to them, **...do not so wickedly.**
3. The political power exercised by the sodomites in the days of Lot is being repeated in today's world.
4. What are hate crimes all about? Not about justice for those committing murder, but those that murder sodomites, whether they know the person is a sodomite or not.
5. New Jersey Governor Jim McGreevey's resignation because he had a gay affair has many people commenting that he was a good governor in spite of his being a homosexual. His wife, of course, has accepted him back.
6. On the same day that the Supreme Court of California invalidated the same-sex marriages that had been performed in San Francisco over the winter of 2004, the embattled governor of New Jersey had politicians across the country tripping over themselves to express and confirm their tolerance and understanding.
7. From the article concerning Governor Jim McGreevey's resignation:
 - a. Quote: We're either going to have to accept openly gay men and women as our elected officials, school teachers, soldiers, sports heroes, business leaders and parents, or we're going to have to deal with the consequences of doing without them in those areas. And if we ever deplete the ranks of our best and brightest by that much, we won't be left with much.
 - b. Many people have forgotten that personal integrity is more important than personal accomplishments.
8. There were sodomites during the times of the kings, which were a continual rebuke to the nation of Israel.
 - a. I Kings 14:24 – During the reign of Rehoboam – **And there were also sodomites in the land: and they did according to all the abominations of the nations which the LORD cast out before the children of Israel.** (See verses 21-24).

- b. I Kings 15:12 – During the reign of Asa - **And he took away the sodomites out of the land, and removed all the idols that his fathers had made.**
 - c. I Kings 22:46 – During the reign of Jehosphaphat - **And the remnant of the sodomites, which remained in the days of his father Asa, he took out of the land.**
 - d. II Kings 23:7 – Josiah destroyed the sodomites when he was king of Judah. **And he brake down the houses of the sodomites, that were by the house of the LORD, where the women wove hangings for the grove.**
- B. God condemns bisexuality.
- 1. Leviticus 20:16 – God condemns bestiality - **And if a woman approach unto any beast, and lie down thereto, thou shalt kill the woman, and the beast: they shall surely be put to death; their blood shall be upon them.**
 - 2. Leviticus 18:23 - **Neither shalt thou lie with any beast to defile thyself therewith: neither shall any woman stand before a beast to lie down thereto: it is confusion.**
- C. God condemns incest.
- 1. Leviticus 18:1-30 – Laws against revealing nakedness (sexual sins).
 - 2. These verses are speaking about incest, which according to Leviticus 18:26 is an abomination to God.
 - 3. I Corinthians 5:1 – **It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father’s wife.**
- D. God condemns fornication and adultery in Deuteronomy 23:17 by stating, **There shall be no whore of the daughters of Israel, nor a sodomite of the sons of Israel.**
- E. God condemns this world because of sexual sin.
- 1. Luke 17:24-30 – God will destroy this world with fire because of the gross sexual sins being committed.
 - 2. According to Genesis 6:1,2 – interfaith marriage was the sin that caused God to destroy the entire world with water.
 - 3. I Corinthians 6:9-10 – **Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, 10 Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.**
 - 4. Romans 1:26-29 – The sin of homosexuality and lesbianism. Public homosexuality is what happens after God gives these people up for the second time. The third time God gives them up brings a complete lack of conscience.
 - 5. I Thessalonians 4:1-8 – The teachings of God for holiness and against wicked sexual sins. – **Furthermore then we beseech you, brethren, and exhort you by the Lord Jesus, that as ye have received of us how ye ought to walk and to please God, so ye would abound more and more. 2 For ye know what commandments we gave you by the Lord Jesus. 3 For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication:**

4 That every one of you should know how to possess his vessel in sanctification and honour; 5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles which know not God: 6 That no man go beyond and defraud his brother in any matter: because that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you and testified. 7 For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness. 8 He therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also given unto us his holy Spirit.

Divorce and Remarriage

WE BELIEVE THAT GOD HATES DIVORCE AND INTENDS MARRIAGE TO LAST UNTIL ONE OF THE SPOUSES DIES. DIVORCE AND REMARRIAGE IS REGARDED AS ADULTERY EXCEPT ON THE GROUNDS OF FORNICATION. ALTHOUGH DIVORCED AND REMARRIED PERSONS OR DIVORCED PERSONS MAY HOLD POSITIONS OF SERVICE IN INDEPENDENCE BAPTIST CHURCH, AND BE GREATLY USED OF GOD FOR CHRISTIAN SERVICE, THEY MAY NOT BE CONSIDERED FOR THE OFFICE OF PASTOR OR DEACON.

- I. WE BELIEVE THAT GOD HATES DIVORCE AND INTENDS MARRIAGE TO LAST UNTIL ONE OF THE SPOUSES DIES.
 - A. It is important at the beginning to understand that sometimes divorce comes through no fault of the divorced person.
 1. There are people who are divorced before they are saved. That does not mean they cannot serve God. They are, of course, restricted from being a deacon or pastor, but they can fulfill every other office in the church.
 2. Sometimes a person finds themselves divorced through no fault of their own. Sometimes the spouse leaves and there is nothing that can be done.
 3. Sometimes a person is divorced through their own fault, but that does not mean they cannot serve God in the situation they find themselves in.
 4. One thing is very necessary to remember: Always serve God, regardless of the past. It is sometimes not possible to fix the past, but we can live successfully in the present, looking toward a glorious future.
 5. No person is without sin, therefore divorced people should not be “looked down on”, as if they are somehow lesser people than others.
 6. In John 8:1-11, the scribes and Pharisees brought a woman taken in the very act of adultery. They desired to trick Jesus into condemning her. Jesus told them it was okay to stone her, only he that was without sin should cast the first stone. All the men went away, beginning from the eldest to the youngest. The lesson is: all have sinned, therefore none can righteously condemn.
 7. We must also remember that right is still right and wrong is still wrong. We can state the truth without condemning.
 - B. The principle of marriage lasting throughout a lifetime is established in the Genesis.
 1. Genesis 2:24 states, **Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.**
 - a. The context of the passage reveals that God has shown Adam there was no suitable helpmeet among all the animals.
 - b. Adam gave names to all the animals, but did not find a suitable help for himself.
 - c. God operated on Adam, and removed one of his ribs, from which he made the woman and brought her to the man.
 - d. Adam immediately named this creature “woman”, because she was a suitable help to him.
 2. The principle of lifelong marriage was challenged by the Pharisees.

- a. Matthew 19:3-12 reveals, **The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? 4 And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female, 5 And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh? 6 Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder. 7 They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away? 8 He saith unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so. 9 And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery. 10 His disciples say unto him, If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry. 11 But he said unto them, All men cannot receive this saying, save they to whom it is given. 12 For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from their mother's womb: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.**
- b. Notice the Pharisees said Moses *commanded* to give a writing of divorcement.
- c. Jesus corrected them by stating that Moses, because of the hardness of their hearts, *suffered* divorce, but from the beginning it was not so.
- d. The Pharisees were putting away their wives for any cause at all, even for "burning the toast".
- e. The issue of marriage and adultery.
- 1.) Jesus said that for a man to divorce a wife, except it be for fornication, caused adultery.
 - 2.) In the days of Christ, a couple was considered married when they were engaged.
 - a.) Matthew 1:18 states that when Mary and Joseph were espoused (engaged) she was found with child of the Holy Ghost.
 - b.) Matthew 1:19 relates that Joseph was the husband of Mary, and considered divorcing her.
 - c.) In Matthew 1:20 the angel of the Lord appeared unto Joseph, instructing him to take Mary his wife.
 - d.) Therefore fornication occurs during the engagement period, not after the couple officially becomes husband and wife.
 - 3.) I believe there is a difference between committing adultery and living adultery.
 - a.) Committing adultery is when a married person has illicit sexual relations.

- b.) Living in adultery is when a married person continually has illicit sexual relations.
 - c.) Marriage, even to a divorced person, does not constitute continual illicit sexual relations.
 - d.) Hebrews 13:4 states, **Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.**
 - f. Matthew 22:23-33 gives the story of the Sadducees asking Christ about the woman who was married seven times to seven different brothers, all the brothers dying before the woman.
 - 1.) The question concerns who she is married to in the afterlife.
 - 2.) Christ explains they do not understand the resurrection.
 - 3.) This story confirms the fact that God desires marriage to remain until death.
 - C. Paul continues to teach what Christ taught, that God intended marriage to last a lifetime.
 - 1. Romans 7:1-3 reveals **Know ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law,) how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth? 2 For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband. 3 So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man.**
 - 2. The subject of this passage is not marriage, but the limited domination of the law.
 - a. Paul uses marriage as an example to the limited domination of the law.
 - b. Paul uses what the people commonly know and accept about marriage to teach a principle of the law they do not understand.
- II. DIVORCE AND REMARRIAGE IS REGARDED AS ADULTERY EXCEPT ON THE GROUNDS OF FORNICATION.
- A. I think it needs to be said that God looks on spiritual adultery very differently than physical adultery.
 - 1. I do not think God approves either spiritual or physical adultery, but spiritual adultery is much worse than physical adultery.
 - 2. I believe men today consider physical adultery is a most terrible sin, but do not think spiritual adultery is bad at all.
 - 3. We should have God's perspective on this matter.
 - B. The definition of fornication and adultery.
 - 1. Fornication is illicit sexual contact of or by a single person.
 - 2. An engaged person commits fornication when they have illicit sexual contact before marriage.
 - 3. Adultery is illicit sexual contact of or by a married person.
 - C. I believe there is a difference in "committing adultery" and "living in adultery".
 - 1. The married person who has illicit sexual relations with a person other than their spouse has committed adultery.

2. The married person who is “living with” a person other than their spouse is “living in adultery”.
3. The single person who is “living with” a person is committing fornication.
- D. A divorced person who remarries has committed adultery, but is not “living in adultery”.
 1. Matthew 19:9 states, **And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery.**
 2. 1 Corinthians 7:9 also reveals, **But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn.**
 - a. There are people who believe it is better if a divorced person never remarries; that they are “living in adultery” if they do remarry.
 - b. I do not believe the Bible teaches that.
 3. Matthew 5:27,28 helps put things in perspective by stating, **Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: 28 But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.**
 - a. Therefore we understand that looking with lust constitutes adultery in the eyes of the Lord.
 - b. It must be understood that what God sees is often very different from what men see.
 4. God used King David after he committed adultery and killed Uriah.
 - a. God can also use people today who are divorced and remarried, as long as their heart is toward God and holiness.
 - b. God did not use King David until after he repented of his wickedness.
- E. God despises interfaith marriage.
 1. Genesis 6:1-3 reveals the flood in the days of Noah occurred because of the sin of interfaith marriage.
 - a. There are many people who believe the sons of God were some sort of angel that co-habited with women, who produced giants.
 - b. This is not so.
 - c. The sons of God are saved people who married lost people (the daughters of men).
 - d. The giants are giants – read carefully verse four which states there were giants in the earth those days, and also after that (after the giants were in the earth) that the sons of God married the daughters of men.
 - e. Verse 4 makes it very clear the giants were not the result of angels co-habiting with women, but the giants were there before the interfaith marriage became prevalent.
 2. Israel had dealt wickedly with the marriage covenant and God would hold them guilty.
 - a. Malachi 2:12-17 states, **Judah hath dealt treacherously, and an abomination is committed in Israel and in Jerusalem; for Judah hath profaned the holiness of the LORD which he loved, and hath married the daughter of a strange god. 12 The LORD will cut off the man that**

doeth this, the master and the scholar, out of the tabernacles of Jacob, and him that offereth an offering unto the LORD of hosts. 13 And this have ye done again, covering the altar of the LORD with tears, with weeping, and with crying out, insomuch that he regardeth not the offering any more, or receiveth it with good will at your hand. Yet ye say, Wherefore? Because the LORD hath been witness between thee and the wife of thy youth, against whom thou hast dealt treacherously: yet is she thy companion, and the wife of thy covenant. 15 And did not he make one? Yet had he the residue of the spirit. And wherefore one? That he might seek a godly seed. Therefore take heed to your spirit, and let none deal treacherously against the wife of his youth. 16 For the LORD, the God of Israel, saith that he hateth putting away: for one covereth violence with his garment, saith the LORD of hosts: therefore take heed to your spirit, that ye deal not treacherously. 17 Ye have wearied the LORD with your words. Yet ye say, Wherein have we wearied him? When ye say, Every one that doeth evil is good in the sight of the LORD, and he delighteth in them; or, Where is the God of judgment?

- 1.) This passage is a description of what Israel has done to God.
 - 2.) God describes the illicit relationship of Israelites who have forsaken the wives of their youth to marry wives of a strange god.
 - 3.) God will cut off every person who has done this, regardless of their station in life.
 - 4.) God states that he is the one who makes marriage, that makes two one, for the explicit purpose of making a godly seed.
 - 5.) Israel has done all they could to destroy the purpose of God by divorcing the wives of their youth.
- b. In Nehemiah 13:23-31, Nehemiah curses the Israelites who married wives of Ashdod, Ammon, and of Moab.

III. ALTHOUGH DIVORCED AND REMARRIED PERSONS OR DIVORCED PERSONS MAY HOLD POSITIONS OF SERVICE IN INDEPENDENCE BAPTIST CHURCH, AND BE GREATLY USED OF GOD FOR CHRISTIAN SERVICE, THEY MAY NOT BE CONSIDERED FOR THE OFFICE OF PASTOR OR DEACON.

- A. Pastoral qualifications require that a pastor (bishop) be the husband of one wife.
1. I Timothy 3:2 declares, **A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach;**
 2. Titus 1:6 states, **If any be blameless, the husband of one wife, having faithful children not accused of riot or unruly.**
- B. One of the qualifications of a deacon is that they be the husband of one wife.
1. I Timothy 3:12 clarifies, **Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well.**
 2. It is very apparent from these scriptures that a woman cannot be a pastor.

- C. There is nothing wrong or unscriptural with a divorced and remarried person being used in the service of God in a local church.
 - 1. The qualification of a pastor and deacon having one wife is given because there were male members of these churches that practiced polygamy.
 - 2. Whether the divorced male had one wife at a time, or the non-divorced male had more than one wife at a time makes no difference before God.
 - 3. The only objection I have to divorced and remarried people taking an active part in church services is when they defend their divorce and remarriage or condemn others who are divorced and remarried.

ABORTION

WE BELIEVE THAT HUMAN LIFE BEGINS AT CONCEPTION AND THAT THE UNBORN CHILD IS A LIVING HUMAN BEING. ABORTION CONSTITUTES THE UNJUSTIFIED, UNEXCUSED TAKING OF UNBORN HUMAN LIFE. ABORTION IS MURDER. WE REJECT ANY TEACHING THAT ABORTIONS OF PREGNANCIES DUE TO RAPE, INCEST, BIRTH DEFECTS, GENDER SELECTION, BIRTH OR POPULATION CONTROL, OR THE MENTAL WELL BEING OF THE MOTHER ARE ACCEPTABLE.

Job 3:16 – Or as an hidden untimely birth had not been; as infants which never saw light.

Psalms 51:5 – Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sins did my mother conceive me.

Psalms 139:14-16 – I will praise thee; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvelous are thy works; and that my soul knoweth right well. 15 My substance was not hid from thee, when I was made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. 16 Thine eyes did see my substance, yet being unperfect; and in thy book all my members were written, which in continuance were fashioned, when as yet there was none of them.

Isaiah 44:24 – Thus saith the LORD, thy redeemer, and he that formed thee from the womb, I am the LORD that maketh all things; that stretcheth forth the heavens alone; that spreadeth abroad the earth by myself;

Isaiah 49:1, 5 – Listen, O isles, unto me; and hearken, ye people, from far; The LORD hath called me from the womb; from the bowels of my mother hath he made mention of my name. 2 And he hath made my mouth like a sharp sword; in the shadow of his hand hath he hid me, and made me a polished shaft; in his quiver hath he hid me; 3 And said unto me, Thou art my servant, O Israel, in whom I will be glorified. 4 Then I said, I have laboured in vain, I have spent my strength for nought, and in vain: yet surely my judgment is with the LORD, and my work with my God. 5 And now, saith the LORD that formed me from the womb to be his servant, to bring Jacob again to him, Though Israel be not gathered, yet shall I be glorious in the eyes of the LORD, and my God shall be my strength.

Jeremiah 1:5 – Before I formed thee in the belly I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations.

Jeremiah 20:15-18 – Cursed be the man who brought tidings to my father, saying, A man child is born unto thee; making him very glad. 16 And let that man be as the cities which the LORD overthrew, and repented not: and let him hear the cry in the morning, and the shouting at noontide; 17 Because he slew me not from the womb;

or that my mother might have been my grave, and her womb to be always great with me. 18 Wherefore came I forth out of the womb to see labour and sorrow, that my days should be consumed with shame?

Luke 1:44 – **For, lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy.**

Genesis 35:26 - **And the sons of Zilpah, Leah's handmaid; Gad, and Asher: these are the sons of Jacob, which were born to him in Padanaram.** Verse 16 states that Benjamin was born at Ephrath. God counts the children to us as being born when they are conceived.

Though God may seem to wink for a time at the cruelty of violent men, yet will call them at last to a strict account for all the innocent blood they have shed, and for their unjust and unmerciful usage of meek and humble persons; whose cry he never forgets (though he doth not presently answer it), but takes a fit time to be avenged of their oppressor, Symon Patrick, D.D. 1626-1707.

ABORTION

One hundred million babies who will never take a breath,
 One hundred million mothers who really could care less.
 Each baby had a father whose eyes he'll never see,
 Who would rather see the baby die than accept responsibility.
 How could a nation under God begin this dreadful fall
 And say we can destroy a life and make it into law?
 The mother doesn't answer now, the father gets away,
 The politician gets his vote, but what a price to pay.
 When blacks were treated cruelly and Jews died by the score,
 The people rose in anger and said this will be no more.
 Now babies are the victims, but they don't have a choice,
 In the womb they're helpless, someone else must be their voice.

This is just a poem I wrote, not meant to stir up strife, But I hope someone will read it and save a baby's life.

-----Ted Hinkle

A man reported to believe that babies should not be considered human until they are at least one month old has been hired by Princeton to teach human values. He is Peter Singer, who has been named the Ira W. DeCamp Professor of Bioethics at the University Center for Human Values. According to the Washington Post, Singer feels that since infants are not rational and self aware, the parents of a baby born with spina bifida, for instance, could justifiably ask a doctor to give the baby a lethal injection. Newborn babies have, to use his analogy, the same moral value as snails.

-----Life in Oregon

John Kerry stated that life begins at conception, but it is not life as we know it.

...\USA\Peter Jennings interviews John Kerry.doc

Hand of Hope

A 21-week-old unborn baby named Samuel Alexander Armas, is being operated on by a surgeon named Joseph Bruner. The baby was diagnosed with spina bifida and would not survive if removed from his mother's womb. Little Samuel's mother, Julie Armas, is an obstetrics nurse in Atlanta. She knew of Dr. Bruner's remarkable surgical procedure. Practicing at Vanderbilt University Medical Center in Nashville, he performs these special operations while the baby is still in the womb.

During the procedure, the doctor removes the uterus via C-section and makes a small incision to operate on the baby. During the surgery on little Samuel, the little guy reached his tiny, but fully developed, hand through the incision and firmly grasped the surgeon's finger. The photograph captures this amazing event with perfect clarity.

The editors titled the picture, Hand of Hope. The text explaining the picture begins, The tiny hand of 21-week-old fetus Samuel Alexander Armas emerges from the mother's uterus to grasp the finger of Dr. Joseph Bruner as if thanking the doctor for the gift of life. Little Samuel's mother said they wept for days when they saw the picture.

She said, "The photo reminds us my pregnancy isn't about disability or an illness, it's about a little person."

THE SANCTITY OF LIFE

I. God Created Life.

- A. Genesis 2:7 – And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.**
- B. Acts 17:23-25 (verse 25 – God gives life/breath to all) – For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, him declare I unto you. 24 God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; 25 Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things;**
 - 1. God Hates the Taking of Human Life.**
 - a. Proverbs 6:16-17 – God hates hands that shed innocent blood. Note innocent, not guilty. Those guilty of shedding innocent blood are condemned to have their blood shed.
 - b. Genesis 4:10 – The blood of innocent Abel cries to God from the ground.
 - c. II Kings 9:26 – The blood of innocent Naboth and his innocent sons cries to God from the ground.
 - d. God will execute judgment upon all who slay innocent people.

- e. The Hebrew word for blood here is plural, referring to the seeds of the killed. (Example: Cain killed Abel as well as any offspring.) -What does God think about the killing of babies? Are they not man's seed?
- f. God did not kill Cain because that is the job of governments, and governments were not established, therefore God put a mark upon Cain and sent him away from God-fearing people.
2. God Commands the protection of human life.
 - a. Exodus 20:13 – Thou shall not kill. The word kill means murder.
 - b. This does not include animals. Man is allowed to kill animals for food, safety, dominion, etc.
 - c. This does include suicide, parricide (murder of parents or close kin), and homicide.
 - d. War, self-defense, execution by civil authority, are all exceptions.
3. Life Is Precious to God.
 - a. Genesis 9:3-7 – Life is in the blood and the one who sheds innocent blood must be killed. It is not the place of individuals to kill the abortionists. That duty is left to governments, whose sole purpose is to protect the innocent. When governments do not do what God established them to do, God will judge that nation.
 - b. Leviticus and Numbers are filled with laws concerning human life. Our country's laws are based on scripture.
 - c. Psalm 9:7-12 – God is preparing his throne for judgment. He keeps perfect records concerning the murder of the innocent.
 - d. Isaiah 26:20-21 – He will hold an inquisition one day to account for this blood.
4. Man Has No Respect For Life.
 - a. Murder and violence are everywhere because of this. (Gun's are not the problem! Man's attitude towards life is the problem)
 - b. We don't punish murderers; we rehabilitate and set them free.
 - c. Abortion at all stages is legal in U.S.A
 - d. Killing of the sick, retarded, deformed, etc. is being debated in our courts.
 - e. We entertain our children with adultery, fornication, and violent murder every day with TV. (An average child that lives to 70 years will have spent ten years of his life watching TV.
5. There Is No King in the Land.
 - a. Judges 21:25 – There was no king in Israel and every man did that which was right in his own eyes.
 - b. We've pushed God away and we're going from bad to worse.
 - c. We began with the sexual revolution of the 60's. A generation that said, If it feels good do it.
 - d. During this same time God, his Word, his Commandments, and prayer were stripped from our schools and public society. (After all, if you're going to break God's law, you don't want to feel guilty about it, so erase the laws.)
 - e. With all this uncontrolled sex, abortion was the natural progression. (Abortion has been legal in America since 1973.)

- f. It's not about rights! Abortion is about selfishness, irresponsibility, and greed.
 - g. The throwing off of all constraints, standards, and morals was inevitable. (This is why homosexuality is everywhere, and President Clinton has promoted it more than anyone.)
 - h. America has no respect for God, morals, or human life. We have charted the course and President Clinton is the result. America has just what it wants in a President.
 - i. President Clinton will most likely walk away from all this smelling like a rose. The only hope is our getting back the Saviour of the salt. Christians have compromised and kept silent too long.
6. **CLOSE- II Chronicles 7:14 - If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land.**

September 12, 2004 – Three federal judges have now (September 2004) stated the ban on partial birth abortion is unconstitutional because the bill makes no provision for the health of the mother. This is the dumbest thing I have ever heard. There is such a thing as a C-section, which will save the life of the mother and the baby. But these people do not want the baby's life to be saved, and they are not concerned with the life of the mother. All they are concerned with is keeping abortion legal.

YOU BE THE JUDGE!!

In 1936 they changed the words but they couldn't change the reality. The German holocaust killed 6,000,000 Jews and a nation kept silent. In the year 2002 we look back in HORROR at the country and people that perpetuated the slaughter of an innocent people. But it can never happen again...or can it?

1936	1973
<p>JEWS ARE NOT LEGAL PERSONS The German Supreme Court refused to recognize Jews living in Germany as legal persons. From that point on they had no rights or protection under the German Constitution. Shortly thereafter the Nazis began their final solution - the total extermination of Jews in Europe. During Hitler's reign over 6,000,000 Jews were put to death.</p>	<p>UNBORN BABIES ARE NOT LEGAL PERSONS The United States Supreme Court in their Roe vs. Wade decision ruled that unborn babies are not legal persons. From that point on they have had no rights or protection under our Constitution. Since that decision over 28,000,000 unborn babies have been put to death by abortion in this country.</p>
<p>JEWS ARE SUB-HUMAN The sub-human, that biologically seemingly complete creation of nature with hands, feet and a kind of brain, with eyes and mouth, is nevertheless a completely different, dreadful creature. He is only a rough copy of a human</p>	<p>UNBORN BABIES ARE SUB-HUMAN Fetuses, especially those as old as five or six months, elicit our sympathy...because they look disconcertingly like people; their</p>

<p>being, with human-like facial traits but nonetheless morally and mentally lower than any animal...Sub-human, otherwise nothing. For all that bare a human face are not equal. (Pamphlet published by the Race Settlement Main Office, Germany, 1942)</p>	<p>physical features are recognizably human. But this sympathy is misplaced... While a fetus of five or six months may, perhaps, possess some flickering of sensation, or some capacity to feel pain, this is equally true and probably even more true of creatures like fish or insects... a proper respect for the right to life requires that it not be respected where it does not exist. (Commentary on Can the Fetus be an Organ Farm?)</p>
<p>JEWES ARE PARASITES Adolph Hitler stated in Mein Kampf, [Jews] are a parasite in the body of other peoples.</p>	<p>UNBORN BABIES ARE PARASITES A woman would have the right to abortion just as she has a right to remove any parasitic growth from her body. (Gloria Steinman on CNN, Sept. 9, 1981)</p>
<p>JEWES ARE A MASS It had nothing to do with humanity...it was a mass. Franz Stangl, Treblinka commandant explaining how he viewed his part in the destruction of almost 1,000,000 men, women and children.</p>	<p>UNBORN BABIES ARE A MASS What is aborted is a protoplasmic mass and not a real, live, grown up individual. This statement was made by Drs. J.F. McDermott & W.F. Char in an effort to pacify nurses at a Hawaiian hospital when they become extremely upset by dead fetuses and pieces of limbs, fingernails and hair in th operating room. (Sereny, Into that Darkness. P.201)</p>
<p>KILLING JEWS IS SIMPLY EVACUATION In an official Nazi report of the fate of 15,000 Jewish women and children killed in the area of Serbia in mobile gas vans, it simply stated that they had been evacuated.</p>	<p>KILLING UNBORN BABIES IS SIMPLY EVACUATION Between 1970 and 1977, California millionaire-abortionist Dr. Edward Allred was personally responsible for destroying 35,000 human lives before birth, including some 7,000 mid-trimester abortions by salt poisoning. When asked by a reporter what happens in an abortion, Dr. Allred said: the contents are evacuated. (Assignment Life, New Liberty Films)</p>
<p>TORTURING JEWS IS MEDICAL RESEARCH To justify the concentration camp experiments Dr. August Hirt supplied this rational, These condemned men will at least make themselves useful, he said. Wouldn't it be ridiculous to execute them and send their bodies to the crematory oven without giving them an</p>	<p>TORTURING UNBORN BABIES IS MEDICAL RESEARCH In 1980 Dr. Martti Kekomaki justified conducting experiments involving slicing open the stomachs and cutting off the heads of live late term aborted babies, An aborted baby is just garbage and that's where it ends up, he declared, Why not</p>

opportunity to contribute to the progress of society. (Aziz, Doctors of Death, 3,305)	make use of it for society? (National Examiner, 8/19/80 pp.20-21)
---	---

ABORTION- the hidden HOLOCAUST

Remember that AMERICA kills 4,000 unborn babies each day.

Can't we be as dedicated and committed to stopping Abortion as the activists are in perpetuating it?

Make a commitment to PRAY for our Country and our unborn Babies EVERY Day!

**PLEASE! FOR THE TRUTH OF A MOST HOLY AND RIGHTEOUS GOD
AND
HIS COMING JUDGMENT!**

Gambling

WE BELIEVE GAMBLING, OR GAMING, IS AGAINST THE BIBLICAL PRECEPT OF TRUSTING GOD FOR DAILY NECESSITIES. GAMBLING APPEALS TO THE NATURAL INSTINCT OF SELFISH SELF-INTEREST. CHILDREN OF GOD SHOULD DEPEND ON GOD, WHILE WORKING WITH THEIR OWN HANDS, AND BE SATISFIED WITH WHAT GOD GIVES THEM.

Gambling Defined

Gambling is defined as taking an artificial, unnatural, unnecessary risk in hopes of excessive gain far above what an investment would pay. Gambling is taking a risk purely for the purpose of taking a risk, which will give gain at someone else's expense.

Many seek to justify gambling by calling almost everything gambling. I have heard people say, there is nothing wrong with gambling. After all, gambling is just taking a chance - all of life is a gamble.

There is a difference between taking an unnecessary risk (gambling) and operating with skill in the unknown. For example: the farmer is not gambling when he plants a crop. The wise investor is not gambling when he invests in the stock market. The driver is not gambling when he drives down the highway. Buying insurance is not gambling, as there is no opportunity of excessive gain. The insurance company is not gambling, but engaging in a business risk, as the farmer engages in a business risk when he plants his crop.

Casting Lots

The Bible mentions casting lots, but this is not gambling. The casting of lots was used in certain instances to determine the will of God.

- Proverbs 16:33 states, **The lot is cast into the lap; but the whole disposing thereof is of the LORD.**
- In Leviticus 16:8-10, Aaron cast lots to determine which of the two goats would be used for the sin offering, and which would become the scapegoat.
- Joshua 18:1-6 records that lots were cast to determine the distribution of land between the twelve tribes of Israel.
- In Jonah 1:7, the sailors cast lots to determine the course of action concerning Jonah.
- The casting of lots in Acts 1:21-26 to replace Judas with Matthias was simply the casting of votes, not throwing dice

The casting of lots is not gambling because there is nothing wagered, therefore nothing is lost.

The Right/Wrong of Gambling

Gambling, now called by the politically correct term gaming, to make it more palatable to our consciences has overtaken our nation. Almost everybody wants something for nothing, and it is believed gambling is the way to get something for

nothing. Almost everybody buys lottery tickets, in the hope of getting something at the expense of someone else.

Headlines often tell of a person winning a large sum of money in the lottery. What the headline should tell is that millions **failed** to win. Some have gambled and won, that is true. But has winning helped spiritually? Have families been strengthened? Has the moral fiber of our nation increased as a result of gambling?

The **real** issue of gambling is not about winning, or casinos making a lot of money; or people losing a lot of money; or jobs; or the supposed lowering of taxes. The issue is righteousness and trust.

The issue is righteousness because:

- Proverbs 14:34, **Righteousness exalteth a nation: but sin is a reproach to any people.**
- Acts 10:35, **But in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him.**

The issue is trust because that nation, that people who fail to trust God **cannot** be a Christian nation, or a Christian people.

The Bible and Gambling - Contentment

I Timothy 6:6-11 - **But godliness with contentment is great gain. {7} For we brought nothing into [this] world, [and it is] certain we can carry nothing out. {8} And having food and raiment let us be therewith content. {9} But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and [into] many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. {10} For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. {11} But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness.**

Proverbs 15:16 - **Better is a little with the fear of the LORD, than great treasure with trouble.**

Proverbs 15:27 - **He that is greedy of gain troubleth his own house; but he that hateth gifts shall live.**

These verses speak of the grief caused by greed, by putting too much thought into this world, which will soon pass away, and too little thought into the world to come, which shall never pass away.

As God's children, we lose contentment when we seek what this world provides instead of trusting God. We are not going to take houses, land, and bank accounts to heaven. In the parable of the sower, Matthew 13:22, Jesus explains, **He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the word; and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.** Here is a child of God who becomes entangled with the riches of this life and loses eternal wealth.

God's people are supposed to trust God (not winning the lottery) for their daily provision. Matthew 6:31-33 states, **Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? Or, What shall we drink? Or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed? 34 (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. 35 But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.**

It is likely every person reading this article has dreamed of being rich, of having all the money they will ever need or want. It is not wrong to be rich, but it is wrong to trust your riches or your station in life. Some of God's most faithful servants were rich, but they did not trust their wealth. They trusted God – everyday and every way.

God's children **are** rich – even though they may not have a large bank account. We have the promise of God that he will provide what we need, when we need it. All we have to do is believe. When we believe Matthew 6:31-33, we will seek, ask and knock. Then, and only then, will we receive from God those things necessary for everyday living.

The Bible and Gambling – Working

Genesis 3:17-19 reveals a part of the curse upon man involves earning a living by the sweat of the brow. When people gamble, they are refusing to submit to the curse by attempting to gain money they have not worked for. This is a sin in the sight of God. II Thessalonians 3:10 commands, **For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat.**

The Bible and Gambling – Selfishness

Matthew 22:34-40 records the answer of Christ to the question, **...which is the greatest commandment in the law?** Christ replied, **Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. 38 This is the first and great commandment.** But Christ did not stop there. He continued with an explanation of the second greatest commandment, which is to love thy neighbor as thyself.

Gambling not only breaks the first commandment, gambling breaks the second commandment as well.

The gambler desires to gain, without working, that which another must lose. The gambler is not thinking of the welfare of the other person, but only his own selfish interest. I Corinthians 13:5 states true love, **...seeketh not her own...** The gambler is showing no love for the other person as Christ declared in the second greatest commandment.

The Bible and Gambling – Secular

Not only is God against gambling, but also the secular magazine, U.S. NEWS & WORLD REPORT, dated March 14, 1994, carried the cover story, How Casinos Empty Your Wallet. The magazine covered the subject from a human viewpoint and reports on the economic disasters that have been documented in communities that have legalized casinos. The article states that the casinos at first contribute money to the budgets of the

towns but in time all other businesses in town (restaurants, clothing stores, grocery stores, drug stores, etc.) suffer loss of sales and lay off employees.

The article referred to the owner of a pawnshop in Tunica County, Mississippi (in the Memphis area), who stated, gamblers frequently go bust and trade rings and jackets for gas money home.

A Police Chief declared, The number of people failing to pay their rent and bills had doubled.

A county justice clerk stated, Arrests for drunken driving has increased 500%.

The report concluded by stating the dollars that come into the community level off and the cost of police, fire protection, government, etc., increase.

Conclusion

The gambler is saying, What God has provided for me is not enough. I need more than God can provide. It is like saying being poor is bad and being rich is good. God does not need our gambling windfall for the furtherance of his kingdom. Everything is his.

Many churches are accepting offerings that come from gambling. Independence Baptist Church will not knowingly accept any funds from anyone that comes from gambling or gaming.

The World to Come

WE BELIEVE IN A PERSONAL, IMMINENT RETURN OF JESUS CHRIST, THAT HE SHALL DESCEND FROM HEAVEN WITH A SHOUT, THAT THE DEAD IN CHRIST SHALL RISE FIRST, AND THEN THE ALIVE IN CHRIST SHALL RISE TO MEET THE LORD IN THE AIR. THIS WILL BEGIN A PERIOD OF SEVEN YEARS OF TRIBULATION TO BE ENDED AT THE BATTLE OF ARMAGEDDON AT WHICH TIME CHRIST SHALL BODILY DESCEND TO THE EARTH TO TAKE UP THE THRONE OF HIS FATHER DAVID, PUT DOWN ALL OF HIS ENEMIES, RULE WITH A ROD OF IRON, TRIUMPH OVER SIN, AND GIVE THE WORLD AN EXAMPLE OF RIGHTEOUS GOVERNMENT DURING HIS 1,000 YEARS OF PERSONAL REIGN ON EARTH. AT THE END OF THE 1,000-YEAR REIGN, THE DEVIL SHALL BE LOOSED AND THERE WILL BE A BATTLE OF GOD AND MAGOG, WHERE CHRIST SHALL UTTERLY CONSUME HIS ENEMIES. AT THIS POINT THE DEAD IN TRESPASSES AND SIN SHALL BE RAISED AND BROUGHT BEFORE THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT AND THERE FACE THE JUDGE OF THE QUICK AND THE DEAD. AFTER THIS JUDGMENT, WHICH IS NOT FOR SALVATION, BUT FOR DEGREES OF PUNISHMENT IN THE LAKE OF FIRE, THEY WILL BE CAST INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE. THEN THE END SHALL COME WHEN CHRIST DELIVERS UP THE KINGDOM TO HIS FATHER.

- I. There are two main views of the world to come.
 - A. Preterism is a belief that the prophetic events of the Bible were completed in 70 AD when Judah fell to Titus.
 1. Partial Preterism.
 - a. Partial Preterism teaches that prophecies such as the destruction of Jerusalem, the Antichrist, the Great Tribulation, and the advent of the Day of the Lord as a “judgment-coming” of Christ were fulfilled in 70 AD when Titus destroyed Jerusalem and stopped the daily animal sacrifices. It identifies “Babylon the great” (Revelation 17-18) with the ancient pagan City of Rome or Jerusalem.
 - b. Most partial preterists believe the Biblical term “the last days” does not refer to the final days of this earth, but to the end of the covenant God made with Israel.
 - c. Most partial preterists believe the Biblical term “last day” refer to the coming of the Lord Jesus Christ to rule the new heaven and the new earth and the resurrection of the just, and the judgment.
 - d. Almost all partial preterists are amillennialists or postmillennialists.
 2. Full Preterism. (Consistent Preterism, Hyper Preterism, or Pantelism)
 - a. Full preterism teaches that all the prophecies of the Bible were fulfilled when Jerusalem was destroyed in 70 AD.
 - b. The second coming of Christ and the resurrection took place when the place of the believing dead was moved to heaven when Christ was raised from the dead.

- c. The second coming of Christ and the resurrection is ongoing as it takes place with each individual when they die.
- 3. Historicism.
 - a. The Historicist viewpoint of eschatology is very similar to the preterists viewpoint as they generally believe the Great Tribulation is past, and applies only to the Jews, not the entire world.
 - b. Historicists believe the Battle of Armageddon applies to the entire world, not just to the Jewish nation.
 - c. Preterists generally believe that all prophecies are fulfilled in the past, but historicists see prophecies continuing to be fulfilled since Titus destroyed Jerusalem in 70 AD.
 - d. Historicists do not look for a single Anti-Christ, who will rule the world during a future tribulation period, instead they believe the Anti-Christ is present and active in the present world, that the Great Tribulation is a continuing event for the Jewish nation.
 - e. Many of the reformers (such as John Calvin, and Martin Luther) were historicists, believing the tribulation was the same as “the times of the Gentiles”.
 - f. Historicists would include all persecutions against Israel as a part of the Great Tribulation, whether that persecution was by Rome when millions of Jews were killed, or by Hitler during the holocaust.
 - g. Historicists generally believe the tribulation or the “times of the Gentiles” ended when Israel became a nation in 1948, or when Jerusalem was returned to Israelite control in 1967.
- B. Futurism.
 - 1. This interpretation of Eschatology events places the prophecies of Revelation and Daniel as future, literal and global.
 - 2. Most eschatology ideas come under the heading of Futurism.
 - a. Pre-millennialism is divided into various groups which relate to the tribulation period. The tribulation period is often called “The Great Tribulation”, or the time of “Jacob’s Trouble”. Most pre-millennialists believe the tribulation is a seven-year period of time in which the anti-Christ will be revealed prior to the coming of Jesus to establish his earthly reign. Most pre-millennialists teach that Christians will not experience the tribulation but will be raptured.
 - 1.) Dispensational pre-millennialism is the belief that the second coming of Christ is literal and occurs in two stages.
 - a.) The first coming involves the rapture of all believers (before the Great Tribulation) as the Lord Jesus Christ comes in the air to remove his children before his coming judgment on all unbelievers.
 - b.) The second coming of Jesus Christ occurs seven years later (after the Great Tribulation), when Christ physically returns to the earth with his bride and all believers, to rule the earth during the millennium and for all eternity.

- 2.) Pre-Tribulationism is the belief that the church of the Lord Jesus Christ will not go through the tribulation but will be raptured away to heaven before the tribulation begins. The tribulation is specifically to break the will of Israel and save them as a nation. The world will endure the judgments of God found in the book of Revelation, and other Old Testament prophetic books.
 - 3.) Partial rapture is the belief that only those who are watching, waiting, and preparing for the return of Christ, will be raptured.
 - 4.) Pre-wrath pre-tribulationism is the view that the church will endure much of the Great Tribulation to purify and perfect the bride, but will escape the wrath of God during the worse part of the tribulation.
 - 5.) Mid-Tribulationism is the belief that the church will be raptured out in the middle of the Great Tribulation (the middle of the 70th week of Daniel), before the Anti-Christ goes into the temple and declares himself God; approximately 1,260 days before Christ comes back.
 - 6.) Post-Tribulationism is the belief that Christ will return at the end of the tribulation and believers who are alive at that time will be raptured. There are 4 views within this position as well. Classic, semi-classic, futurist, dispensational.
 - b. Post-millennialism – The belief that Christ returns after the millennium: there is no distinction between the rapture and second coming: it is one event. Post-millennialism teaches that the Church, by the preaching of the Gospel, will be enabled to reconstruct the culture around biblical laws.
 - c. Amillennialism teaches there is no literal millennium before or after Christ returns to earth. This idea uses an allegorical or symbolic approach to prophecy. The foundation of amillennialism is that the kingdom of Christ is spiritual rather than literal and physical.
- II. It is almost impossible to categorize all the various views of eschatology, there are so many of them, and so many variations of each view.
- A. It is not our purpose to give a detailed analysis of each eschatology view; rather we have given a brief summary of the major components.
 - B. There is no doubt that there is much “overlapping” of eschatology beliefs as far as men are concerned, but God knows exactly how everything will work out, as he has established this entire world and watches over it for our good and his glory.
 1. Our part in eschatology is to read the Bible and trust God to work out all the details of his soon return and the destruction of this present world.
 2. Revelation 1:3 gives this promise: **Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.**

The Belief Of Independent Baptist Church

- I. WE BELIEVE IN A PERSONAL, IMMINENT RETURN OF JESUS CHRIST, THAT HE SHALL DESCEND FROM HEAVEN WITH A SHOUT, THAT THE

DEAD IN CHRIST SHALL RISE FIRST, AND THEN THE ALIVE IN CHRIST SHALL RISE TO MEET THE LORD IN THE AIR.

- A. I Thess 4:16-18 states, **For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: 17 Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. 18 Wherefore comfort one another with these words.**
1. Jesus Christ will return to take his saints out of this world.
 - a. He will not leave this precious duty to any angel, or arrange for us to travel to be with him by ourselves.
 - b. Luke 16:22 reveals that the angels came to carry Lazarus into the presence of Jesus Christ, but the rapture is not death.
 2. Christ shall come with a shout as recorded in Psalm 50:3-6, **Our God shall come, and shall not keep silence: a fire shall devour before him, and it shall be very tempestuous round about him. 4 He shall call to the heavens from above, and to the earth, that he may judge his people. 5 Gather my saints together unto me; those that have made a covenant with me by sacrifice. 6 And the heavens shall declare his righteousness: for God is judge himself. Selah.**
 - a. Christ is a silent God today, but he will soon break his silence by shouting for all his saints to come to him.
 - b. There were also 400 silent years between the prophecies of Malachi and the coming of John the Baptist, who prepared the way for Jesus Christ.
 3. If unbelievers hear they will not understand what happens when the rapture occurs.
 - a. John 12:28,29 reveals that shortly before his crucifixion, Christ was troubled, which caused his father to speak to him. The people that stood by and heard it thought it thundered.
 - b. Acts 9:7 states that when God spoke to Saul and saved him, those that stood by heard a voice, but saw no man.
 - c. Unbelievers will know something happened at the rapture, but they will not understand it because the rapture has nothing to do with them.
 4. The order of the rapture.
 - a. The dead in Christ shall rise first.
 - b. After the dead in Christ are risen, we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the air.
 5. We shall meet the Lord in the air, not upon this earth.
 - a. We shall ever be with the Lord from that time forever more.
 - b. After the tribulation period is ended, Christ shall put his feet upon the Mount of Olives as he returns to the earth in fulfillment of Acts 1:11.
 6. It is very apparent that Paul was looking for Christ to come back in the rapture before he died, as he expected to be alive when the rapture occurred.
 7. Our hope is not in dying but in earnest expectation of the rapture.

B. I Corinthians 15:32 declares, **If after the manner of men I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what advantageth it me, if the dead rise not? let us eat and drink; for to morrow we die.**

1. If there is no resurrection, there is no need to be true to God and his word.
2. If there is no life after death, there is no need to struggle against wickedness, sin, or our own corruption.
3. We should simply eat and drink, and enjoy the sin of this world.

II. THIS WILL BEGIN A PERIOD OF SEVEN YEARS OF TRIBULATION AT WHICH TIME CHRIST SHALL BODILY DESCEND TO THE EARTH TO TAKE UP THE THRONE OF HIS FATHER DAVID, PUT DOWN ALL OF HIS ENEMIES, RULE WITH A ROD OF IRON, TRIUMPH OVER SIN, AND GIVE THE WORLD AN EXAMPLE OF RIGHTEOUS GOVERNMENT DURING HIS 1,000 YEARS OF PERSONAL REIGN ON EARTH.

A. THIS WILL BEGIN A PERIOD OF SEVEN YEARS OF TRIBULATION.

1. Daniel 9:24-27 reveals, **Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy. 25 Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince shall be seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times. 26 And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined. 27 And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.**
2. The seventy weeks of Daniel 9 is divided into three different sections.
 - a. Seven weeks, plus 62 weeks = 69 weeks or 438 years. (69 weeks x 7 years = 483 years.)
 - b. The street and wall shall be build during the first seven week period (49 years).
 - c. 62 weeks after this (62 weeks x 7 years = 434 years), Messiah (Christ) shall be cut off, or crucified.
 - d. After Messiah is cut off, Titus, which is a type of the anti-Christ of Revelation, will come and destroy Jerusalem.
 - e. The Anti-Christ of Revelation will agree to some type of seven year covenant with the Jews, but will break that agreement after 3 ½ years.
 - f. The seven year covenant between the Anti-Christ and Israel will take place during the tribulation period.

3. The commandment to rebuild and restore Jerusalem was made by Cyrus, King of Persia in the year 536 BC, as revealed by Ussher, in his Annals of the World, page 118, column 1, paragraph 950.
 - a. II Chronicles 36:22,23 confirms that Cyrus made the proclamation to restore and rebuild Jerusalem.
 - b. Ezra 1:1-4 is another scripture that confirms the commandment of Cyrus.
 - c. Isaiah 44:24-28 is still another scripture that confirms that Jerusalem will be restored by Cyrus.
 - d. Isaiah 45:1, 13 is yet another scripture that confirms that Cyrus will return the inhabitants to Jerusalem.
 4. There are 483 years from the command made by Cyrus to restore and rebuild Jerusalem until Christ.
 5. The seven years of the tribulation period completes the 490 years of Daniel's prophecy.
- B. To be ended at the battle of armageddon, whose location is unknown, but supposed to be on the west side of Jordan.
1. Zechariah 14:3-7 states, **Then shall the LORD go forth, and fight against those nations, as when he fought in the day of battle. 4 And his feet shall stand in that day upon the mount of Olives, which is before Jerusalem on the east, and the mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof toward the east and toward the west, and there shall be a very great valley; and half of the mountain shall remove toward the north, and half of it toward the south. 5 And ye shall flee to the valley of the mountains; for the valley of the mountains shall reach unto Azal: yea, ye shall flee, like as ye fled from before the earthquake in the days of Uzziah king of Judah: and the LORD my God shall come, and all the saints with thee. 6 And it shall come to pass in that day, that the light shall not be clear, nor dark: 7 But it shall be one day which shall be known to the LORD, not day, nor night: but it shall come to pass, that at evening time it shall be light.**
 - a. When Christ comes in the rapture, he will not come to the earth.
 - b. When Christ comes after the tribulation period, he will set his feet on the Mount of Olives, and will fight for his saints as he fought in the day of battles recorded in the Old Testament.
 - c. The Mount of Olives will split in half, and purifying water will come from the midst of the mountain, going into all the world, cleansing the waters of the entire world.
 - d. If Christ would not return to the earth, it seems all Israel would be destroyed and Satan would have his way with all the inhabitants of the earth.
 2. Zechariah 14:12-16 declares **And this shall be the plague wherewith the LORD will smite all the people that have fought against Jerusalem; Their flesh shall consume away while they stand upon their feet, and their eyes shall consume away in their holes, and their tongue shall consume away in their mouth. 13 And it shall come to pass in that day, that a great tumult from the LORD shall be among them; and they shall lay hold every one on the hand of his neighbour, and his hand shall rise up against**

the hand of his neighbour. 14 And Judah also shall fight at Jerusalem; and the wealth of all the heathen round about shall be gathered together, gold, and silver, and apparel, in great abundance. 15 And so shall be the plague of the horse, of the mule, of the camel, and of the ass, and of all the beasts that shall be in these tents, as this plague. 16 And it shall come to pass, that every one that is left of all the nations which came against Jerusalem shall even go up from year to year to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, and to keep the feast of tabernacles.

- a. This is a very vivid description of the destruction at the Battle of Armageddon.
 - b. All the nations of the world will be gathered together against Jerusalem, attempting to wipe them from the face of the earth.
 - c. The flesh of the invading armies will be dissolved while they stand upon their feet.
 - 1.) It is likely this is a description of the swiftness of their destruction.
 - 2.) It should also be noticed that these rebels stand upon their feet until their death.
 - 3.) Isaiah 45:23, Romans 14:11 and Philippians 2:10 all reveal that every knee should bow and confess that Jesus Christ is Lord.
 - 4.) Those that fight against Israel at Armageddon will stand, showing their rebellion against God until their death.
 - 5.) The Great White Throne Judgment occurs after the death of all unbelievers, and it is there they will bow their knee and confess that Jesus Christ is Lord.
 - d. After the victory of Armageddon, Christ will establish his kingdom at Jerusalem, where he will reign with a rod of iron for 1,000 years.
3. Revelation 16:16 states, **And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon.**
- a. The location of Armageddon is uncertain, but it is supposed the battle will take place somewhere around Jerusalem, as that city is what the battle over.
 - b. There is a day of judgment for every sin.
 - c. Unbelievers will not submit themselves to the mercies of God, therefore they must endure the wrath of God.
4. Revelation 14:20 declares, **And the winepress was trodden without the city, and blood came out of the winepress, even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs.**
- a. Isaiah 63:3 declares that it is Christ that treads the winepress alone.
 - b. Comparing Revelation 19:13 (Christ being clothed with a vesture dipped in blood) and Revelation 19:14 (the armies in heaven clothed with fine linen, white and clean) reveals again that Christ will tread the winepress alone.
 - c. Believers do not do the work of Christ, but glorify him for the work he does.

C. AT WHICH TIME CHRIST SHALL BODILY DESCEND TO THE EARTH.

1. Job 19:25,26 reveals the desire of Job, **For I know that my redeemer liveth, and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth: 26 And though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God: 27 Whom I shall see for myself, and mine eyes shall behold, and not another; though my reins be consumed within me.**
 - a. Job lived during the time of Jacob and Esau, yet believed in the physical resurrection of believers, and the physical appearance of God.
 - b. Acts 23:6, Acts 24:15 and I Peter 1:3 reveals that if there is no resurrection, there is no hope.
2. Isaiah 9:6,7 states, **For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. 7 Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.**
 - a. Christ not only came as a baby, to grow up and take the sins of the world upon him, he also came to take the throne of David to himself.
 - b. When Christ begins his kingdom, it will never end, but will continue for all eternity.
3. Zechariah 14:4 declares **And his feet shall stand in that day upon the mount of Olives, which is before Jerusalem on the east, and the mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof toward the east and toward the west, and there shall be a very great valley; and half of the mountain shall remove toward the north, and half of it toward the south.**
 - a. Many have waited and longed for the day when Jesus once against plants his feet on the Mount of Olives.
 - b. There is coming a day when this will happen, then all our desires will be fulfilled.
4. Malachi 4:2 reveals **But unto you that fear my name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall.**
 - a. The Old Testament ends with this prophecy, which many desired to see fulfilled.
 - b. God will give healing to all those that fear his name and desire his righteousness.
5. Acts 1:11 states, **Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven.**
 - a. The early church watched Jesus ascend into heaven, wondering what it could mean.
 - b. The angel told them Jesus would come again, just as he went into heaven.
 - c. This passage is not speaking about the rapture, but the physical return of the Lord to this earth to establish his eternal kingdom.

6. Revelation 1:7 declares, **Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen.**
 - a. This passage refers to the second phrase of the second coming of Christ.
 - b. It is not referring to the rapture.
 - c. Every eye shall not see Christ at the rapture, but every eye will see him when he physically returns to the earth.
 - d. Years ago, it was not know how every eye would see Christ when he returns to the earth, but today with satellites and world-wide television, it is easily understood.
- D. TO TAKE UP THE THRONE OF HIS FATHER DAVID.
 1. Luke 1:31-33 states, **And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name JESUS. 32 He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David: 33 And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end.**
 2. Christ came the first time to grant salvation and eternal life to all who would believe.
 3. The Jews rejected Christ because they were looking for a king, not believing they needed a Saviour.
 4. The second time, Christ comes as king over all the earth, not just Israel, or Jerusalem.
- E. PUT DOWN ALL OF HIS ENEMIES.
 1. Matthew 25:31-34 declares, **When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: 32 And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats: 33 And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. 34 Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world:**
 - a. There is a coming judgment of all nations, who will be judged according to how they treated God's chosen nation – Israel.
 - b. There will be no lawyers at this trial, and no appeals to a higher court.
 - c. There is no higher court and Jesus Christ.
 2. Revelation 19:11-21 reveals **And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. 12 His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself. 13 And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God. 14 And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. 15 And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God. 16 And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name**

written, **KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS. 17 And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God; 18 That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great. 19 And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army. 20 And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone. 21 And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.**

3. II Peter 3:10 continues, **But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up.**
 - a. This verse speaks of the final outcome of the wrath of God upon this universe.
 - b. The context of this passage does not void other Biblical passages that reveal the time frame of eschatology.
4. Revelation 19:20 confirms, **And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.**
 - a. In order for Christ to rule this earth, his enemies must be destroyed or put away.
 - b. The beast (the Anti-Christ), and the false prophet (the Unholy Spirit of the Anti-Christ), are both cast alive into the Lake of Fire.
 - c. They are not judged as humans are judged, but are already judged for their wickedness.
 - d. Jude 1:6 declares the angels are reserved unto the judgment (condemnation) that will come upon them.
5. Revelation 20:1-3 verifies, **And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. 2 And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, 3 And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season.**
 - a. Satan's kingdom is broken by the KING of Kings and the LORD of Lords.
 - b. When the Anti-Christ and the Unholy Spirit of the Anti-Christ is cast into the Lake of Fire, Satan is cast into the bottomless pit for 1,000 years.

- c. The bottomless pit is exactly that, a pit with no bottom.
 - d. It is impossible for Satan to get out, or for anybody to get to him.
 - e. Satan will be unable to tempt any person or cause any person to sin for 1,000 years.
6. Revelation 20:10 confirms, **And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.**
- a. After the thousand years are ended, Satan shall be loosed from the bottomless pit, and will go out to deceive the nations of this earth.
 - b. He shall gather a vast army, which no man can number, which will attack Jerusalem in an attempt to destroy the city, but God will send his fire from heaven upon them, and Satan's army will be destroyed.
 - c. It is amazing that people will live under the perfect rule of Christ for 1,000 years, then when Satan is released from the bottomless pit, they will freely and willingly follow him to their eternal destruction.
 - d. People are indeed lost and blind without the light and life of God.
- F. RULE WITH A ROD OF IRON.
1. Zechariah 14:16-21 states, **And it shall come to pass, that every one that is left of all the nations which came against Jerusalem shall even go up from year to year to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, and to keep the feast of tabernacles. 17 And it shall be, that whoso will not come up of all the families of the earth unto Jerusalem to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, even upon them shall be no rain. 18 And if the family of Egypt go not up, and come not, that have no rain; there shall be the plague, wherewith the LORD will smite the heathen that come not up to keep the feast of tabernacles. 19 This shall be the punishment of Egypt, and the punishment of all nations that come not up to keep the feast of tabernacles. 20 In that day shall there be upon the bells of the horses, HOLINESS UNTO THE LORD; and the pots in the LORD'S house shall be like the bowls before the altar. 21 Yea, every pot in Jerusalem and in Judah shall be holiness unto the LORD of hosts: and all they that sacrifice shall come and take of them, and seethe therein: and in that day there shall be no more the Canaanite in the house of the LORD of hosts.**
- a. Christ will have to force unbelievers to yield to his kingdom, even during his millinnium reign.
 - b. Believers will be more than happy to yield themselves, as this is their pleasure.
 - c. Unbelievers will not willingly come to Jerusalem to worship, but they will suffer the plagues of Egypt if they do not.
 - d. In this present world, the mark of Satan and his Anti-Christ are everywhere, but in the Millennium, the mark of Christ will be everywhere.
2. Ezekiel 38:23 reveals, **Thus will I magnify myself, and sanctify myself; and I will be known in the eyes of many nations, and they shall know that I am the LORD.**
- a. Christ will "force" unbelievers to see his goodness, and live under his righteous reign, but they will not like it.

- b. Christ will be magnified and glorified in their sight, as they will live the “good life” under the authority of Christ, but they will not like it.
 - c. All nations will know that Christ is God, but they will not willingly honor him as God.
 - d. This shows that people are sinners.
 - e. They do not need Satan to lead them into wickedness, as Satan led the woman in the Garden of Eden.
- G. TRIUMPH OVER SIN, AND GIVE THE WORLD AN EXAMPLE OF RIGHTEOUS GOVERNMENT DURING HIS 1,000 YEARS OF PERSONAL REIGN ON EARTH.
- 1. Isaiah 9:7 states, **Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.**
 - a. The reign of Christ is an everlasting reign.
 - b. Christ will begin his reign during the millennium on this present earth, and will continue to all eternity on the new earth.
 - c. Christ will sit upon the throne of David, whose throne will be extended into eternity.
 - d. The rule of Christ will be with perfect judgment and justice forever.
 - e. Nothing will be able to spoil in that holy reign.
 - 2. Zechariah 14:8-11 states, **And it shall be in that day, that living waters shall go out from Jerusalem; half of them toward the former sea, and half of them toward the hinder sea: in summer and in winter shall it be. 9 And the LORD shall be king over all the earth: in that day shall there be one LORD, and his name one. 10 All the land shall be turned as a plain from Geba to Rimmon south of Jerusalem: and it shall be lifted up, and inhabited in her place, from Benjamin’s gate unto the place of the first gate, unto the corner gate, and from the tower of Hananeel unto the king’s winepresses. 11 And men shall dwell in it, and there shall be no more utter destruction; but Jerusalem shall be safely inhabited.**
 - a. These verses describe some of the physical perfections of the day.
 - b. Living waters shall proceed from the Mount of Olives, which split in half when Christ returned to this earth, and shall go into all the world to purify all the waters of the earth.
 - c. Christ shall be supreme ruler, and land that was formerly inhabitable will be inhabited with prosperity.
 - d. Men will be safe because Christ will stop destruction, large and small, personal and public.
- III. AT THE END OF THE 1,000-YEAR REIGN, THE DEVIL SHALL BE LOOSED AND THERE WILL BE A BATTLE OF GOD AND MAGOG, WHERE CHRIST SHALL UTTERLY CONSUME HIS ENEMIES.
- A. AT THE END OF THE 1,000-YEAR REIGN, THE DEVIL SHALL BE LOOSED

1. Revelation 20:7 states, **And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison,**
 2. The millinnium will be very peaceable, only because Christ will not allow rebellion.
 3. At the end of the millinnium, Christ will allow Satan to be freed from the bottomless pit, where he will gather a vast army in a final attempt to destroy Jerusalem.
 4. Why would Christ allow Satan to be freed when he knows what Satan will do?
 - a. There will never be a doubt as to the justice of God.
 - b. There will never be a doubt as to the mercy of God.
 - c. There will never be a doubt as to the personality of Satan, and his desire to destroy.
 - d. There will never be a doubt as to why sin came into the world.
 - e. There will never be a doubt concerning the proper judgment of sin.
 - f. There will never be a doubt concerning the patience and longsuffering of God in dealing with sin.
 - g. Christ will be magnified and glorified above all.
- B. AND THERE WILL BE A BATTLE OF GOG AND MAGOG, WHERE CHRIST SHALL UTTERLY CONSUME HIS ENEMIES.
1. Ezekiel chapter 38 reveals this truth.
 - a. It is amazing to understand that Gog and Magog are very old nations, yet they will continue throughout the millinnium, and would continue farther, yet their sin causes them to be destroyed.
 - b. The prophecies of this chapter will finally be fulfilled at the end of the millinnium.
 2. Revelation 20:7-10 states, **And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, 8 And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. 9 And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them. 10 And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.**
 - a. Satan is loosed from the bottomless pit, and will go to all the nations of this earth and gather a great army, whose number cannot be counted.
 - b. This evil army will surround the people of God and Jerusalem.
 - c. The fire from God will quickly and surely end this evil campaign.
 - d. The armies will descend into hell when they are destroyed.
 - e. Satan will be cast, without a judgment, into the Lake of Fire and Brimstone where he will be tormented forever.
 - f. Here is a quick end to an inglorious career of destruction.
- IV. AT THIS POINT THE DEAD IN TRESPASSES AND SIN SHALL BE RAISED AND BROUGHT BEFORE THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT AND THERE FACE THE JUDGE OF THE QUICK AND THE DEAD.

- A. Revelation 20:11-15 reveals, **And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them. 12 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. 13 And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. 14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. 15 And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.**
1. There are two judgments: The Great White Throne Judgment for the lost, and the Judgment Seat of Christ for the saved.
 2. The dead are the lost, who will be gathered before the Great White Throne.
 3. All will be gathered.
 - a. No lost person shall escape this judgment.
 - b. Bodies that were cast into the sea and eaten and bodies that were burned and the ashes scattered to the four-corners of the earth will be re-established and reunited with the soul and brought before this final judgment.
 4. It is surely a terrifying thing to die without Christ, but it will be more terrifying to stand before the righteous judge in eternal judgment.
 5. Christ will use his Bible to judge every person according to their works.
 6. The lost are carnal, dead in trespasses and sins, and have never done anything good in the eyes of God, therefore all their works are evil.
 7. Every person who is judged at this judgment will be cast into the Lake of Fire.
- B. II Timothy 4:1 reveals, **I charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing and his kingdom;**
1. This verse explains that Christ is the eternal judge.
 2. The quick are the saved – those who have been quickened, according to Ephesians 2:1.
 3. The dead are the lost.
 4. The judgment of the saved will be at the appearing of Christ.
 5. The judgment of the lost will be at the kingdom of Christ – at the end of the millennium.
- V. AFTER THIS JUDGMENT, WHICH IS NOT FOR SALVATION, BUT FOR DEGREES OF PUNISHMENT IN THE LAKE OF FIRE, THEY WILL BE CAST INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE.
- A. AFTER THIS JUDGMENT, WHICH IS NOT FOR SALVATION, BUT FOR DEGREES OF PUNISHMENT IN THE LAKE OF FIRE
1. There is no judgment to determine whether a person is saved or lost.
 - a. There are two judgments – one of the saved, and one of the lost.
 - b. Eternal life is determined in this life while both judgments are after this life.

- c. Those who believe we are saved if our good works outweigh our bad works have no scriptural foundation for their belief.
 2. I Corinthians 3:8 declares, **Now he that planteth and he that watereth are one: and every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labour.**
 - a. This passage is specifically speaking about the saved, who are judged according to their own works.
 - b. The judgment of God on his people is completely righteous and just.
 - c. Christ understands all the various situations of our life, all our background and all our opportunities for good and evil.
 - d. Christ will take all these various situations into account in our personal judgment.
 - e. Christ will make no mistake when he judges us, and will show exactly the proper amount of justice and mercy.
 - f. Any reward received by the righteous will be much more than any of them deserve.
 - g. Any loss experienced by the righteous at the judgment will be much less than any of them deserve.
 3. Revelation 20:13-14 states, **And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. 14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.**
 - a. This passage is specifically speaking about the lost, who are judged according to their works.
 - b. Every lost person will be reunited with their body to stand before Christ at this final judgment.
 - c. Lost people will not be judged to see if they are going to heaven or not, because no lost person will ever go to heaven.
 - d. Lost people are going into the Lake of Fire.
 - e. This judgment is to determine the degree of suffering they will experience.
 - f. Christ knows all about every lost person.
 - g. Lost people who have not heard the gospel, or have heard very little of the gospel, will not suffer as much as the lost person who has heard the gospel story all their lives.
 - h. Christ knows the intensity of the Holy Spirit drawing in every lost person and will judge them according to that intensity.
- B. THEY WILL BE CAST INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE
 1. Revelation 20:15 states, **And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.**
 - a. All those whose names are not found in the book of life will be cast into the Lake of Fire.
 - b. The names of all the elect of God were written in the book of life by Christ before the foundations of this world.
 - c. There is no working for salvation, but a working because of salvation.
 - d. Salvation is a gift of God, not a wage we have earned.
 - e. The Lake of Fire is just that – a lake of fire instead of a lake of water.

2. Romans 6:1,2 confirms, **What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? 2 God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?**
 - a. This verse confirms that believers should not continue in sin.
 - b. Saved people are dead to sin, alive to God, and should live a victorious life without sinful failures.
- VI. THEN THE END SHALL COME WHEN CHRIST DELIVERS UP THE KINGDOM TO HIS FATHER.
- A. I Corinthians 15:24,25 reveals, **Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. 25 For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet.**
 - B. The end of this present experience (the entire universe, including time and all the other elements that make up this universe) shall come only when Christ delivers up the kingdom to God.
 1. The ultimate end is when we see God who is Christ instead of seeing Christ who is God.
 2. Today, we cannot stand to look upon God the Father, but when the end comes, we will not need to see God through Christ, any more than we will need faith, for all things will then be fulfilled.
 - C. Christ must reign until he has conquered all his enemies.
 1. The enemies of Christ begin with Satan, but include the fallen angels.
 2. The enemies of Christ also include the lost, who are in constant rebellion against him.

Church Covenant

Having been led, as we believe, by the Spirit of God to receive the Lord Jesus Christ as our Saviour, and on the profession of our faith, having been baptized in the name of the Father and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, we do now in the presence of God, angels, and this assembly, most solemnly and joyfully enter into covenant with one another, as one body in Christ.

We engage therefore, by the aid of the Holy Spirit, to walk together in Christian love; to strive for the advancement of this church, in knowledge, holiness, and comfort; to promote its prosperity and spirituality; to sustain its worship, ordinances, discipline, and doctrines; to contribute cheerfully and regularly to the support of the ministry, the expenses of the church, the relief of the poor, and the spread of the gospel through all nations.

We also engage to maintain family and secret devotion; to religiously educate our children; to seek the salvation of our kindred and acquaintances; to walk circumspectly in the world; to be just in our dealings, faithful in our engagements, and exemplary in our deportment; to avoid all tattling, backbiting, and excessive anger; to abstain from the sale and use of intoxicating drinks as a beverage, and to be zealous in our efforts to advance the kingdom of our Saviour.

We further engage to watch over one another in brotherly love; to remember each other in prayer; to aid each other in sickness and distress; to cultivate Christian sympathy in feeling and courtesy in speech; to be slow to take offense, but always ready for reconciliation, and mindful of the rules of our Saviour to secure it without delay.

We moreover engage that when we remove from this place, we will as soon as possible unite with some other church, where we can carry out the spirit of this covenant and the principles of God's Word.